

E V P H V E S AND HIS ENGLAND.

*Containing his voiage and adventures:
Mixed with sundry pretty discourses of
honest loue, the description of the Coun-
try, the Court, and the manners
of the Ile.*

Delightfull to be read, and nothing hurt-
full to be regarded: wherein there is small
offence by lightnesse giuen to the wise, and lesse occasi-
on of loosenes proffered to the wanton.

¶ By *John Lily*, Master of Art.

Commend it, or amend it.



*to 550 part of a Billings
500 550 part of a Billings
500 550 part of a Billings
500 550 part of a Billings*

AT LONDON.
Printed for *William Leake*, dwelling in Pauls church-
yard, at the signe of the Holy-ghost.

THE H V E S

AND HIS CO
LAND

Countess of Devon and Somerset
Mixed with the property of the Countess of
In the house of the Countess of Devon
the Countess of Devon
of the Countess of Devon

Delightful to behold, and nothing but
full to be regarded: wherein there is small
of the Countess of Devon
and the Countess of Devon

at the house of the Countess of Devon

Countess of Devon



At London

Printed by the Countess of Devon
at the house of the Countess of Devon

To the right Honourable my very good
Lord and Master, Edward de Vere, Earle of Oxenford,
Vicount Bulbeck, Lord of Escales and Badlesmere, and
Lord great Chamberlaine of England, Iohn Lily wisheth long
life, with increase of Honour.

(. .)



THE first picture that *Phidias* the first Painter shadowed, was the portrature of his owne person, saying thus ; If it be well, I will paint many besides *Phidias*: If ill, it shall offend none but *Phidias*. In the like manner fareth it with me (right Honourable) who neuer before handling the pensill, did for my first counterfait color mine own *Enphues*, being of this minde, that if it were likd, I would draw more besides *Enphues*: if loathed, grieu none but *Enphues*. Since that, some there haue been, that either dissembling the faults they saw, for feare to discourage me, or not examining them for loue they bare to me, that praised my old worke, & vrged me to make a new, whose words I thus answered ; If I should coine a worse, it would be thought that the former was framed by chaunce, as *Protogenes* did the forme of his dogge ; if a better, for flattery, as *Narcissus* did, who onely was in loue with his owne face ; if none at all, as froward as the Mulitions, who being intreated, will scarce sing Sol Fa, but not desired, straine aboue Ela.

But their importunitie admitted no excuse, insomuch that I was enforced to prefer their friendship before mine owne fame, being more carefull to satisfie their requests, then fearefull of others reports ; so that at the last I was content to set another face to *Enphues*, but yet iust behind the other, like the image of *Ianus*, not running together like the Hopplitides of *Parrhasius*, lest they should seeme so vnlike brothers, that they might be both thought bastards. The picture wherof I yeeld as commo for al to view, but the patronage only to your Lordship, as able to defend ; knowing that the face of *Alexander* stamped in Copper, doth make it currant, that the name of *Cesar* wrought in Canyas, is esteemed as Cambrick, that the very feather of an Eagle is of force to consume the Beetle.

I haue brought into the world two children: of the first I was deliuered before my friends thought mee conceiued : of the second, I went a whole yeere big, and yet when euery one thought me ready

64041

The Epistle Dedicatory.

to lie downe, I did then quicken. But good huswiues shall make my excuse, who know that Hens do not lay Egges when they cluck, but when they cackle: nor men set forth bookes when they promise, but when they performe. And in this I resemble the Lapping, who fearing her young ones to be destroyed by passengers, flieth with a false cry farre from the nests, making those that look for them, seeke where they are not. So I, suspecting that *Euphues* would bee carped of some curious Reader, thought by some false shew to bring them in hope of that which I then ment not, leading them with a longing of a second part, that they might speake well of the first, being neuer farther from my study, then when they thought me howering ouer it.

My first burden, comming before his time, must needs bee a blind whelp: the second brought forth after his time, must needs bee a monster. The one I sent to a noble man to nurse, who with great loue brought him vp for a yeare: so that wherfocuer he wander, he hath his nurses name in his fore-head, where sucking his first milke, he cannot forget his first Master.

The other (right Honorable) being yet in his swathe-clouts, I commit most humbly to your Lordships protection, that in his infancy he may bee kept by your good care from falles, and in his youth, by your great countenance shielded from blowes, and in his age, by your gracious countenance defended from contempt. He is my yongest and my last, and the paine that I sustained for him in trauell, hath made me past teeming, yet doe I thinke my selfe very fertill, in that I was not altogether barren. Glad I was to send them both abroad, lest making a wanton of my first, with a blinde conceit I should resemble the Ape, and kill it by culling it; and not able to rule the second, I should with the Viper, lose my blood with mine owne broode. Twinnes they are not, but yet brothers, the one nothing resembling the other, and yet as all children are now a daies, both like the Father.

Wherin I am not vnlike vnto the vnskilful Painter, who hauing drawn the Twinnes of *Hippocrates* (who were as like as one pease is to another) and being told of his friends, that they were no more like then *Saturne* and *Apollo*, he had no other shift to manifest what his worke was, then ouer their heads write, The Twinnes of *Hippocrates*. So may it be, that had I not named *Euphues*, few would haue

The Epistle Dedicatory.

haue thought it had beene *Euphues*, not that in goodnesse the one so farre excelleth the other, but that both being so bad, it is hard to iudge which is the worst. This vnskilfulnesse is no waies to be couered, but as *Accius* did his shortnes, who being a little Poet, framed for himselfe a great picture : so I being a naughty Painter, haue gotten a most noble Patron ; being of *Vlysses* minde, who thought himselfe safe vnder the shield of *Ajax*.

I haue now finished both my labours, the one being hatched in the hard Winter with the Alcion, the other not daring to bud till the cold were past: like the Mulbery. In either of the which, or in both, if I seeme to gleane after anothers cart for a few eares of corne, or of the tailors shreds to make me a liuery, I will not deny but that I am one of those Poets, which the Painters faine to come vnto *Homers* bason, there to lap vp that he doth cast vp.

In that I haue written, I desire no praise of others, but patience: altogether vnwilling, because euery way vnworthy to be accounted a worke-man. It sufficeth me to be a water-bough, no bud, so I may be of the same roote : to be the yron, no Steele, so I may bee in the same blade : to be vinegar, no wine, so it be in the same caske : to grinde colours for *Appelles*, though I cannot garnish, so I be of the same shop. What I haue done, was onely to keepe my selfe from sleepe, as the Crane doth the stone in her foote : and I would also with the same Crane I had been filēt holding a stone in my mouth. But it falleth out with me as with the yong wrastler that came to the games of Olimpus, who hauing taken a foile, thought scornie to leaue, till he had receiued a fall : or him that being pricked in the finger with a bramble, thrusteth his whole hand amongst the thornes for anger. For I, seeing my selfe not able to stand on the ice, did neuerthelessse aduenture to run, and being with my first Booke brought into disgrace, could not cease vntill I was brought into contempt by the second: wherein I resemble those that hauing once wet their feet, care not how deepe they wade.

In the which my wading (right honourable) if the enuious shall clāp led to my heeles to make mee sinke, yet if your Lordship with your little finger do but hold me vp by the chinne, I shall swimme, and be so farre from being drowned, that I shall scarce be duckt.

When *Bucephalus* was painted, *Apelles* craued the iudgement of none but *Zenox*: when *Iupiter* was carued, *Prisus* asked the censure

17049

The Epistle Dedicatory.

of none but *Lisippus*: now *Euphues* is shadowed, onely I appeale to your Honor, not meaning thereby to be carelesse what others think but knowing that if your Lordship allow it, there is none but will like it: and if there be any so nice whom nothing can please, if he will not commend it, let him amend it.

And here (right Honorable) although the history seeme vnperfect, I hope your Lordship wil pardon it. *Apelles* died not before he could finish *Venus*, but before he durst. *Nichomachus* left *Tindarides* rawly, for feare of anger, not for want of Art. *Timomachus* brok off *Medea* scarce halfe colored, not that he was not willing to end it, but that he was threatned. I haue not made *Euphues* to stand without legs, for that I want matter to make them, but might to maintaine them; so that I am enforced with the old Painters, to colour my Picture but to the middle, as he that drew *Cyclops*, who in a little Table made him to lie behind an Oake, where one might perceiue but a peece, yet conceiue that all the rest lay behind the tree: or as hee that painted a horse in the Riuer with halfe legs, leauing the pasterns for the viewer to imagine, as in the water.

For he that vieweth *Euphues*, will say that he is drawn but to the waste: that he peepeth as it were from behind some Screen, that his feete are as it were in the water; which maketh mee present your Lordship with the wounded body of *Hector*, as it appeared to *Andromache*, and with halfe a face, as the Painter did him that had but one eie; for I am compelled to draw a hose on, before I can finish the legges, and in steed of a foot to set down a shooc. So that whereas I had thoght to shew the cunning of a Chyrurgion by mine Anatomie with a knife, I must play the Tailor on the shop-board with a paire of sheeres. But whether *Euphues* limp with *Vulcan*, as borne lame, or goe on stilts with *Amphionax*, for want of legges, I trust I may say, his feet should haue beene old *Helena*: for the poore Fisherman that was warned hee should not fish, did yet at his doore make Nets, and the olde Vintener of Venice, that was forbidden to sell wine, did notwithstanding hang out an Iuy-bush.

This Pamphlet (right Honorable) containing the estate of *England*, I know none more fit to defend it the one of the Nobility of *England*: nor any of the Nobility more ancient or more honorable, then your Lordship. Besides that, describing the condition of the *English* Court, and the Maiestie of our dread Soueraine, I could not finde

The Epistle Dedicatory.

finde one more noble in the Court then your Honour, who is, or should be vnder her Maiestie in chiefeft Court : by birth borne to the greatest office, and therefore me thought by right to be placed in great authoritie. For who so compareth the honour of your Lordships noble house, and the fidelity of your Ancestors, may well say, which no other can truly gain-say, *VERO NIHIL PERIVS*. So that I commit the end of all my paines vnto your most Honourable protection, assuring my self that the little Cock-boat is safe when it is hoised into a tall ship, that the Cat dare not fetch the Mouse out of the Lions denne, that *Enphues* shall be without danger by your Lordships patronage : otherwise I cannot see, where I might find succour in any noble personage. Thus praying continually for the increase of your Lordships honour, with all other things that you would wish, or God will grant, I end.

Your Lordships most dutifully
to command,

John Lely.

17049



To the Ladies and Gentle-women of England, John Lily wisheth what they would.



Rachne hauing wouen in cloth of Arras a Raine-bowe of sundry silkes, it was objected vnto her by a Lady more capitious then cunning, that in her worke there wanted some colours, for that in a Raine-bow there should be all. Vnto whom she replied, if the colours lacke thou lookest for, thou must imagine that they are on the other side of the cloth: for in the Skie we can discern but one side of the Raine-bow, and what colours are in the other, see we cannot, guesse we may.

In the like manner (Ladies and Gentlewomen) am I to shape an answer in the behalfe of Euphues, who framing diuers questions and quirkes of loue; if by some more curious then needeth, it shal be told him that some sleights are wanting, I must say they are noted in the back-side of the booke. When Venus is painted, we cannot see her back but her face, so that all other things that are recounted in loue. Euphues thinketh them to hang at Venus backe in a budget, which because he cannot see, hee will not set downe. Those discourses, I haue not clapt in a cluster, thinking with my selfe, that Ladies had rather be sprinkled with sweete water, then washed: so that I haue sowed them here and there, as it were Strawberies, not in heaps as Hops be: because I perceine you haue more delight to gather flowres one by one in a Garden, then to snatch them by handfuls from a garland.

It resteth, Ladies, that you vouchsafe the paines to read it; but at such times as you spend in playing with your little dogs. And yet will I not pinch you of that pastime, for I am content that your dogs lie in your laps, so Euphues may be in your hands: that when you shall be wearie in reading of the one, you may be readie to sport with the other: or handle him as you doe your iunkets: that when you can eat no more, you tie some in your napkin for your children: or if you be filled with the first part, put the second in your pocket for your waiting maides. Euphues had rather be shut in a Ladies coffer, then open in a Scholers study.

To the Ladies and Gentle-women.

Yet after dinner you may over-look him to keepe you from sleepe, or if you be heauie, to bring you asleepe: for to worke upon a full stomacke is against Physicke, and therefore better it were to hold Euphues in your hands, though you let him fall when you be willing to winke, then to sewe in a clout and pricke your fingers when you begin to nod.

Whatsoever he hath written, it is not to flatter, for he neuer reaped any reward by your sex, but repentance; neither can it be to mocke you, for he neuer knew any thing by your sex but righteousness. But I feare no anger for saying well, when there is none but thinketh she deserueth better. She that hath no glasse to dresse her head, will vse a bowle of water: shee that wanteth a sleeke-stone to smooth her linnen, will take a Pibble: the country dame girdeith herselfe as strait in the wast with a course caddis, as the Madam of the Court with a silke Riband. So that seeing euery one so willing to be pranked, I could not thinke any one unwilling to be praised. One hand washeth another, but they both wash the face: one foot goeth by another, but they both carry the bodie; Euphues and Philautus praise one another, but they both extoll women: Therefore in my minde, you are more beholding to Gentlemen that make the colour, then to the Painters, that draw your counterfait: for that Apelles cunning is nothing, if he paint with water; and the beautie of women not much, if they goe vnpraised.

If you thinke this loue dreamed, not done, yet mee thinketh you may as well like that loue which is penned and not practised, as that flower that is wrought with a needle, and groweth not by nature: the one you weare in your heads for the faire sight, though it haue no sauour, the other you may read for to passe the time, though it bring small pastime.

You choose cloth that will weare whitest, not that will last longest: colours that looke freshest, not that endure soundest: and I would you would read Bookes that haue more shew of pleasure, then ground of profit; then should Euphues be as often in your hands, being but a toy, as Lawne on your heads being but trash; the one will be scarce liked after once reading, and the other is worne out after the first washing.

There is nothing lighter then a feather, yet is it set a loft in a womans hat; nothing slighter then a haire, yet is it most frised in a Ladies head. so that I am in good hope, though there be nothing of lesse account then Euphues, yet he shall be marked with Ladies eies, and liked sometimes in their eares: for this I haue diligently obserued, that there shall bee nothing found, that may offend the chaste minde with vnseemely termes or vncleanly talke.

17041

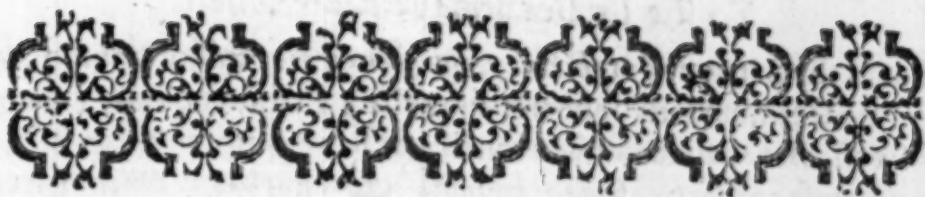
To the Ladies and Gentle-women.

Then Ladies I commit my selfe to your courtesies, craving this only, that having read, you conceale your censure, writing your iudgements, as you do the Posies in your Rings, which are alwaies next to the finger, not to be seene of him that holdeth you by the hands, & yet knowne to you that weare them on your bands: if you be wrung (which cannot be done without wrong) it were better to cut the shooe then burne the last. If a Taylor make your Gowne too little, you cover his fault with a broad stomacher; if too great, with a number of pleights; if too short, with a faire guard; if too long, with a false gathering: my trust is you will deale in the like maner with Euph: that if we haue not fed your humour, yet you will excuse him more then the Taylor: for could Euphues take the measure of a womans minde, as the Taylor doth of her bodie, he would goe as neere to fit them for a fancie, as the other doth for a fashion.

He that weighs windes, must haue a steddie hand to hold the Ballance; and he that searcheth a womans thoughts, must haue his owne stayed. But lest I make my Epistle, as you doe new-found Bracelets, endlesse, I will frame it like a Bullet, which is no sooner in the mold but it is made. Committing your Ladiships to the Almighty, who grant you all you would haue, and should haue: so your wishes stand with his will. And so I humbly bid you farewell.

Your Ladiships to command

John Lily.



TO THE GENTLEMEN Readers.

Gentlemen, *Euphues* is come at the length, though too late: for whose absence, I hope three bad excuses shall stand in stead of one good reason. First, in his trauell you must thinke he loytered, tarrying many a moneth in *Italy*, viewing the Ladies in a Painters shop, when he should haue beene on the Seas in a Merchants shippe, not vnlike vnto an idle huswife, who is catching of flyes, when she should sweepe Copwebs.

Secondly, being a great start from *Athens* to *England*, he thought to stay for the aduantage of a Leape-yeare: and had not this yeere leapt with him, I thinke he had not yet leapt hither.

Thirdly, being arriued, he was as long in viewing of *London*, as hee was in comming to it, not far differing from Gentlewomen, who are longer a dressing their heads, then all their whole bodies. But now hee is come, Gentlemen, my request is onely to bid him welcome: for diuers there are, not that they dislike the matter, but that they hate the man, that will not sticke to teare *Euphues*, because they doe enuy *Lily*: wherein they resemble angry dogs, which bite the stone, not him that throweth it; or the cholericke Horse-rider, who being cast from a young Colt, and not daring to kill the horse, went into the Stable to cut the Saddle.

These be they that thought *Euphues* to be drowned, and yet were neuer troubled with drying of his clothes: but they ghesled as they wished, and I would it had happened as they desired. They that loath the Fountaines head, will neuer drinke of the little Brookes: they that seek to poyson the fish, will neuer eat the Spawne: they that like not me, will not allow any thing that is mine.

To the Gentlemen Readers.

But as the Serpent *Porphyrus*, though hee bee full of poyson, yet hauing no teeth, hurteth none but himselfe : so the enuious, though they swell with malice till they burst, yet hauing no teeth to bite, I haue no cause to feare. Onely my sute is to you, Gentlemen, that if any thing be amisse, you pardon it : if well, you defend it : and how-soeuer it be, you accept it.

Faults escaped in the printing, corrected with your pennes; omitted by my negligence, ouerslip with patience, committed by ignorance, remit with fauour. If in euery part it seeme not alike, you know that it is not for him that fashioeneth the shooe, to make the graine of the leather. The old Hermit will haue his talke fauor of the Cell, the old Courtier, his first loue taste of *Saturne*, yet the last Louer, may happily come somewhat neere *Jupiter*. Louers when they come into a Garden, some gather Nettles, some Roses, one Tyme, another Sage, and euery one that for his Ladies fauor, that she fauoreth : inso-much as there is no weede almost, but is worne.

If you, Gentlemen, doe the like in reading, I shall be sure all my discourfes shall be regarded, some for the smell, some for the smart, all for a kinde of louing-smacke : Let euery one follow his owne fancy, and say that is best, which he liketh best. And so I commit euery mans delight to his owne choice, and my selfe to all your courtesies.

Yours to vse,

John Lily.



EVPHVES AND HIS England.



Vphues hauing gotten all things necessaris for his voyage into England, accompanied onely with Philautus, tooke shipping the first of December, 1579. by our English Computation: who as one resolued to see that with his eyes, which he had oftentimes heard with his eares, began to vse this perswasion with his friend Philautus, as well to counsell him how he should behaue himselfe in England, as to comfort him now being on the Seas. As I haue found thee willing to be a felloe in my trauel, so would I haue thee ready to be a follower of my counsell: in the one thou shalt shew thy good will, in the other manifest thy wisdom. We are now sailing into an Island of small compasse, as I ghesse by their Maps; but of great ciuility, as I heare by their manners: which if it be so, it behoueth vs to be more inquisitiue of their conditions, then of their Country, and more carefull to marke the natures of their men, then curious to note the situation of the place. And surely me thinketh we cannot better bestow our time on the Sea, then in aduice how to behaue our selues when wee come to shoze: for greater danger is there to arriue in a strange Country where the inhabitants be politike, then to be tossed with the troublesome waues, where the Mariners be unskilfull. Fortune guideth men in the rough Sea, but wisdom ruleth them in a strange Land.

If travellers in this our age, were as wary of their conditions, as they be venturous of their bodies, or as willing to reape profit by their paines, as they are to endure perill for their pleasure, they would either prefer their owne soile befoze a strange land, or good

17049

Euphues and his England.

counsell befoze their blinde conceit. But as the young Scholler in Athens, went to heare Demosthenes eloquence at Corinth, and was intangled with Lais beauty: so most of our trauellers which pretend to get a smacke of strange language to sharpen their wits, are infected with vanity in following their wils. Danger and delight grow both vpon one stalke, the Rose and the Canker in one bud, white and blacke are commonly in one border. Seeing then my good Philautus, that we are not to conquer wild beasts by sight, but to confer with wise men by policy, we ought to take greater heed that we be not intrapped in folly, then feare to be subdued by force. And here by the way it shall not be amisse, as well to driue away the tediousnes of time, as delight our selues with talke, to rehearse an old Treatise of an ancient Hermit, who meeting with a Pilgrime at his Cell, vttered a strange and delightfull Tale: which if thou Philautus art disposed to heare, and these present attentine to haue, I will spend some time about it, knowing it both fit for vs that be trauellers to learne wit, and not vnfit for those that be Merchants to get wealth.

Philautus, although the stumps of loue so sticked in his minde, that he rather wished to heare an Elegie in Ouid, then the tale of an Hermit: yet was he willing to lend his eare to his friend, who had left his heart with his Ladie. For you shall vnderstand, that Philautus hauing read the cooling card which Euphues sent him, sought rather to answer it, then allow it. And I doubt not but if Philautus fall into his old vaine in England, you shall heare of his new device in Italy. And although some shall thinke it impertinent to the Historie, they shall not finde it repugnant, no more then in one Rosegay to set two flowers, or in one counterfeit two colours, which bringeth more delight then disliking. Philautus answered Euphues in this manner.

My good Euphues, I am as willing to heare thy tale, as I am to bee partaker of thy trauell: yet I know not how it cometh to passe, that my eies are either heauy against foule weather, or my head so drowisie against some ill newes, that this tale shall come in good time to bring me asleepe, and then shall I get no harme by the Hermite, though I get no good: the other that

Euphues and his England.

that were then in the Ship, flocked about Euphues, who began in this manner:

There dwelt sometimes in the Island Scirum, an ancient Gentleman called Cassander, who aswell by his being a long gatherer, as his trade, being a leaud Usurer, wared so wealthy, that he was thought to haue almost all the money in that Country in his owne Coffers, being both aged and sickly, found such weaknesse in himselfe, that he thought Nature would yeeld to death, and Physicke to his diseases. This gentleman had one onely Son, who nothing resembled the Father either in fancy or fauour: which the old man perceiuing, dissembled with him both in nature and honesty, whom he caused to be called vnto his bedde side, and the Chamber being voided, he brake with him in these tearmes.

Callimachus, (soz so was he called) thou art too young to die, and I too old to liue: yet as Nature must of necessitie pay her debt to Death, so must she also shew her deuotion to thee, whom I aliuie had to be the comfort of mine age, and whom alone I must leaue behinde me soz to be the onely maintainer of all my honour. If thou couldest aswell conceiue the care of a Father, as I can leauell at the nature of a childe, or were I as able to vtter my affection towards a Sonne, as thou oughtest to shew thy duty to thy sire, then wouldest thou desire my life to enioy my counsell, and I should correct thy life to amend thy conditions: yet so tempered, as neither rigour migh detract any thing from affection in mee, or feare any whit from thee in dutie. But seeing my selfe so feeble that I cannot liue to be thy guide, I am resolved to giue thee such counsell as may doe thee good: wherein I shall shew my care, and discharge my duty. My good Sonne, thou art to receiue by my death wealth, and by my counsell wisdom, and I would thou wert as willing to imprint the one in thy heart, as thou wilt be ready to beare the other in thy purse: to be rich is the gift of Fortune, to be wise, the grace of God. Haue more minde on thy Bookes, then on thy bags, more desire of godlinesse then gold, greater affection to die well, then to liue wantonly.

But as the Cipresse tree, the more it is watred, the more it withereth, and the oftner it is lopped, the sooner it dieth: so vnbridled youth, the more it is by graue aduice counselled, or due correction controlled,

17044

Euphues and his England.

controlled, the sooner it falleth to confusion, hating all reasons that would bring it from folly, as that tree doth all remedies that should make it fertile.

Alas Callimachus, when wealth cometh into the hands of youth before they can use it, then fall they to all disorder that may be, feeding that with a forke in one yeere, which was not gathered with a rake in twenty. But why discourse I with thee of worldly affaires, being my selfe going to heauen? Here, Callimachus, take the key of yonder great barred Chest, where thou shalt finde such store of wealth, that if thou use it with discretion, thou shalt become the onely rich man of the world. Thus turning him on the left side, with a deepe sigh and pitifull groane, gaue vp the ghost.

Callimachus, hauing more minde to looke to the locke, then for a shrouding sheet, the breath being scarce out of his Fathers mouth, and his body yet panting with heat, opened the Chest, where he found nothing but a Letter written very faire, and sealed vp with his signet at armes, with this superscription;

In finding nothing, thou shalt gaine all things.

Callimachus, although he were abashed at the sight of the empty Chest, yet hoping this Letter would direct him to the golden Mine, he boldly opened it, the contents whereof followed in these termes.

Wisdom is great wealth, sparing is good getting, thrift consisteth not in gold, but grace. It is better to die without money, then to liue without modestie. But no more cloathes on thy backe, then will expell cold, neither any more meat in the bellie, then may quench hunger. Use not change in attire, nor varietie in thy diet, the one bringeth pride, the other surfeits. Each vaine, void of pietie: both costly, wide of profit.

Goe to bedde with the Lambe, and rise with the Lark: Late watching in the night breedeth vnquiet: and long sleeping in the day, vngodlinesse: Fly both, this as vnwholsome, that as vn honest. Enter not into bands, no not for thy best friends: hee that payeth another mans debts, seeketh his owne decay: it is as rare to see a rich surety, as a blacke Swan; and he that lendeth to all that will borrow,

Euphues and his England.

row, sheweth great good will, but little wit. Lend not a pennie without a pawning, for that will be a good gage to borrow. Be not hasty to marry: it is better to have one plough going, then two Cradles: and more profit to have a barne filled, then a bed. But if thou canst not live chastly, choose such a one, as may be more commended for humility, then beauty. A good huswife is a great patrimony, and shee is most honourable that is most honest. If thou desire to be old, beware of too much wine. If to be wealthy, take heed of many women. If to be rich, shun playing at games. Long quaffing maketh a short life: Fond lust causeth dry bones: and leaud pastimes naked purses. Let the Cooke be thy Physitian, and the Shambles thy Apothecaries shop: Hee that for every qualme will take a receipt, and cannot make two meales, vntlesse Galen bee his Gods good; shall bee sure to make the Physitian rich, and himselfe a begger: his bodie will neuer bee without diseases, and his purse euer without money.

Be not too lauish in giuing almes: the charity of this country is, God help thee: and the courtesie, I haue the best wine in the towne for you.

Live in the Countrey, not in the Court, where neither grasse will grow, nor mosse cleaue to thy heeles.

Thus hast thou, if thou canst vse it, the whole wealth of the world; and he that cannot follow good counsell, neuer can get commodity. I leaue thee more then my father left me, for he dying, gaue mee great wealth, without care how I might keepe it: and I giue thee good counsell, with all meanes how to get riches. And no doubt, what so is gotten with wit, will be kept with warinesse, and increased with wisdom.

God blesse thee, and I blesse thee: and as I tender thy safety, so God deale with my soule.

Callimachus was stricken into such a maze at this his fathers last Will, that he had almost lost his former wit: and being in an extreame rage, renting his clothes and tearing his haire, he vttered these words:

Is this the nature of a Father, to deceiue his Sonne, or the part of crabbed age, to delude credulous youth? Is the death-bed, which ought to bee the end of deuotion, become the beginning of deceit?

17041

Euphues and his England.

Oh Cassander, friend I cannot terme thee, seeing thee so unkind, and father I will not call thee, whom I finde so unnatural.

Who so shall heare of this vngatefulnesse, wil rather lament thy dealing then thy death, and maruaile that a man affected outwardly with such great gravity, should inwardly bee infected with so great guile. Shall I then shew the duty of a childe, when thou hast forgotten the nature of a Father? No, no, for as the Torch turned downeward, is extinguished with the selfe same War, which was the cause of his light: so nature turned to unkindnesse, is quenched by those meanes it should bee kindled, leauing no branch of loue, where it found no root of humanity. Thou hast carried to thy graue more gray haire, then yeeres: and yet more yeeres then vertues. Couldst thou vnder the image of so precise holinesse, harbour the expresse paterne of barbarous cruelty? I see now, that as the canker sooner entrench into the white Rose, so corruption doth easily creepe into the white head. Would Callimachus could as well digest thy malice with patience, as thou didst disguise it with craft: or would I might either bury my care with thy carcase, or that thou hadst ended thy defame with thy death. But as the hearbe Moly hath a flower as white as Snow, and a root as blacke as Inke, so age hath a white head, shewing pity, but a blacke heart, swelling with mischief. Whereby I see that old men are not vnlike vnto the old Trees, whose barkes seeme to bee sound, when their bodies are rotten.

I will mourne, not that thou art now dead, but because thou hast liued so long, neither do I weep to see thee without breath, but to find thee without money. In stead of coine thou hast left me counsell. A politike old man, didst thou learne by experience, that an edge can be any thing woorth if it haue nothing to cut: or that Miners could worke without metals, or wisdome thrive without wherewith? What auaileth it to be a cunning Lapidary, and haue no stones: or a skilful pilot, and haue no ship: or a thifty man, and haue no money: wisdome hath no mint, counsell is no coyner. He that in these daies seeketh to get wealth by wit without friends, is like vnto him that thinketh to buy meat in the market for honesty, without money: which thriueth on either side so wel, that the one hath a witty head, and an empty purse, the other a godly minde, and an empty belly.

Pea,

Euphues and his England.

Yea, such a world it is, the gods can doe nothing without gold: and who of more might: no: Princes any thing without gifts: and who of more Maiesty: no: Philosophers any thing without gilt: and who of more wisdom: For as among the Egyptians, there was no man esteemed happy that had not a beast full of spots; so amongst vs there is none accounted wise, that hath not his purse full of gold. And hadst thou not loued money so well, thou wouldest neuer haue liued so warily, and died so wickedly, who either burying thy treasure dost hope to meet it in Hell, or borrowing it of the diuell, hast rendred him the whole: the interest whereof, I feare mee, commeth to no lesse then the price of thy soule.

But whither art thou carried Callimachus? rage can neither reduce thy Fathers life, no: reconer his treasure. Let it suffice thee that he was unkind, and thou vnfortunate: that he is dead and heareth thee not, that thou art alieue and profitest nothing.

But what? did my Father thinke, that too much wealth would make me proud: and feared not too great misery would make me desperate? Whiles hee was beginning afresh to renue his complaints and reuile his parents, his kins-folke assembled, who caused him to brydle his lauish tongue, although they maruailed at his piteous tale. For it was well knowne to them all, that Cassander had more money then halfe the Country, and loued Callimachus better then his owne selfe.

Callimachus by the impoxtunity of his allies, repressed his rage, setting order for all things requisite for his Fathers Funerals: who being brought with due reuerence vnto the graue, hee returned home, making a short Inuentory to his Fathers long will. And hauing made ready money of such moueables as were in his house, put both them and his house into his purse, resolving now with himselfe in this extremity, either with the hazard of his labour to gaine wealth, or by misfortune to seeke death, accounting it as great shame to liue without trauell, as grieve to bee left without treasure. And although he was earnestly entreated, as wel by good profers as gentle perswasions, to wean himselfe from so desolat, or rather desperate life, he would not hearken either to his owne commodities or counsels: for seeing (said he) I am left heir to all the world, I meane to execute my authoritie; and to claime my lands in all places

17041

Euphues and his England.

places of the world. Who now so rich as Callimachus? who had as manie reuenues euery where as in his owne countrey. Thus being in a readines to depart, apparelled in all colours, as one fit for all companies, and willing to see all countries, iournied thre or foure daies very deuoutly like a Pilgrime, who straying out of his pathway, and somewhat weary, not vsed to such day labours, rested himselfe vpon the side of a siluer streame: euen almost in the griping of the Euening: where thinking to steale a nappe, began to close his eyes.

As he thus lay betwene slumbring and waking, hee heard one cough piteously, which caused him to start; and seeing no creature, he searched diligently in euery bush, and vnder euery shrub: at the last he lighted on a little Cae, where thrusting in his head, more bold than wise, he espied an old man clad all in gray, with a head as white as Alabaster, his hoary beard hanging downe welnere to his knees, with him no earthly creature, sauing onely a House sleeping in a Cats eare.

Ouer the fire this good old man sate leaning his head to looke into a litile earthen vessel which stood by him. Callimachus delighted more then abashed at this strange sight, thought to see the manner of his hoast, before he would be his guest.

This old man immediatly tooke out of his pot certaine roots, on the which he fed hungerly, hauing no other drinke then faire water. But that which was most of all to bee considered and noted, the House and the Cat fell to their victuals, being such reliques as the old man had left, yea, and that so louingly, as one would haue thought them both married, iudging the House to be very wilde, or the Cat very tame.

Callimachus could not refraine laughter, to behold the solempne Feast; at the voice whereof, the old man arose, and demanded who was there: vnto whom Callimachus answered: ffather, one that wisheth thee both greater cheer, and better seruants: vnto whom he replied, shoaring vp his eyes; By his son, I account the chere good which maintaineth health, and the seruants honest, whom I find faithful. And if thou neither think scorn of my company nor my cell, enter & welcome: the which offer Callimachus accepted with great thanks, who thought his lodging would bee better then his Supper.

Euphues and his England.

per. The next morning, the old man being very inquisitive of Callimachus what he was, where he dwelt, and whither he would, Callimachus discoursed with him in particulars, as before, touching his fathers death, and despite, against whom he uttered so many bitter and burning words, as the old Hermits eares glowed to heare them, and my tongue would blister if I should utter them.

Moreover he added, that he was determined to seeke adventures in strange lands, and either to fetch the golden fleece by trauell, or sustaine the force of fortune by his owne wilfull folly.

Now Philautus thou shalt vnderstand that this old Hermit, which was named also Cassander, was brother to Callimachus father, and vncle to Callimachus, vnto whom Cassander had before his death conueied the summe of ten thousand pound, to the vse of his sonne in his greatest extremity and necessity, knowing, or at the least foreseeing, that his yong Colt would neuer beare a white mouth without a hard bridle. Also he assured himselfe that his brother so little tendered money, being a professed Hermit, and so much tendered and esteemed Callimachus, being his neere kinsman, as hee put no doubt to stand to his deuotion.

Cassander this old Hermit, hearing it to bee Callimachus his nephew, and vnderstanding of the death of his brother, dissembled his griefe, although he were glad to see things happen out so well, and determined with himselfe to make a cosen of his yong nephew, vntill he had bought wit with the price of woe: wherefore hee assayed first to stay him from trauell, and to take some other course more fit for a gentleman. And to the intent, said he, that I may perswade thee, giue eare to my tale. And this is the tale, Philautus, that I promised thee, which the Hermit sitting now in the Sunne, began to utter to Callimachus.

When I was yong as now thou art, I neuer thought to be old, as now I am: which caused lusty blood to attempt those things in youth, which aking bones haue repented in age. I had one onelie brother which also bore my name, being both borne at one time as twins, but so farre disagreeing in nature, as had not as well the respect of the iust time, as also the certainty and assurance of our mothers fidelity, perswaded the world wee had one Father; it

17041

Euphues and his England.

would very hardly haue bene thought, that such contrary dispositi-
ons could well haue bene bred in one wombe, or issued from ones
loynes. Yet as out of one and the selfesame root, commeth as well
the wild Olive, as the Sweet; and as the Palme Persian Figtree bea-
reth aswell Apples as Figges: so our mother thrust into the world
at one time, the blossome of gravity, and lightnesse. We were nur-
sed both with one teat, where my brother sucked a desire of thrift,
and I of theft: which evidently sheweth, that as the breath of the
Lion engendreth aswell the Serpent as the Ant; and as the selfe-
same deaw fozreth the earth to yeld both the darnell & wheat; or as
the Easterly wind maketh the blossomes to blast, and the buds to
blow: so one wombe nourisheth contrary wits, and one milke, di-
uers manners: which argueth something in Nature, I know not
what, to be marvellous, I dare not say monstrous.

As we grew old in yeeres, so began we to bee more opposite in o-
pinions: hee graue, I gamesome: hee studious, I carelesse: hee with-
out mirth, and I without modesty. And verily had wee resembled
each other as little in fauour, as wee did in fancy, or disagreed as
much in shpe, as we did in sense, I know not what Dedalus would
haue made a Labyrinth for such monsters, or what Apelles could
haue coloured such mishans. But as the Painter Tamantes could in
no way expresse the griefe of Agamemnon, who saw his only daugh-
ter sacrificed, and therefore dyed him with a baile ouer his face,
whereby one might better conceiue his anguish, then hee colour
it: so some Tamantes seeing vs, would be constrained with a
Curtaine to shadow that deformity, which no counterfait could
portray liuely. But Nature recompenced the dissimilitude of
mindes, with a sympathy of bodies: for we were in all parts one
so like the other, that it was hard to distinguish either in speech,
countenance, or height, one from the other; sauing that either car-
ried the motion of his minde in his maners, and that the affects of
the heart were betrayed by the eyes, which made vs known ma-
nifestly. For as two Rubies be they neuer so like, yet if they be
brought together, one staineth the other, so wee being close one to
the other, it was easie to imagine by the face, whose vertue deserved
most fauour: for I could neuer see my brother, but his gravity
would make mee blush, which caused mee to resemble the Thrush,
who

Euphues and his England.

who neuer singeth in the company of the Nightingale. For whilst my brother was in presence, I durst not presume to talke, lest his wisdom might haue checked my wilddnes. Much like to Rolcius, who was alwaies dumbe when he dined with Cato. Our Father being on his death bed, knew not whom to ordaine his heire, being both of one age: to make both, would breed, as he thought, vnquiet: to appoint but one, were, as he knew, iniurie: to diuide equally, were to haue no heire: to impart more to the one then to the other, were partiality: to disherit mee of his wealth, whom nature had disherited of wisdom, were against reason: to barre my brother from gold, whom God seemed to endue with grace, were flat impiety: yet calling vs before him, he vttered with watry eies these words.

Were it not my Sons, that Nature worketh more in mee, then iustice, I should disherit the one of you, who promisseth by his folly to spend all, and leaue the other nothing, whose wisdom seemeth to purchase all things. But I well know that a bitter root is amended with a sweet graft, and crooked trees prooue good Cammocks, and wilde grapes make pleasant wine. Which perswadeth me, that thou (pointing to me) wilt in age repent thy youthly affections, and learne to dy as well, as thou hast liued wantonly. As for thee, (laying his hand on my brothers head) although I see more then commonly in any of thy yeeres, yet knowing that those that giue themselves to be bookish, are often times so blockish, that they forget thrift (whereby the old saying is verified, that the greatest Clerks are not the wisest men, who dig still at the root while others gather the fruit) I am determined to helpe thee forward, lest hauing nothing, thou desire nothing, and so bee accounted as no body. He hauing thus said, called for two bags, the one full of gold, the other stufte with writings, and casting them both vnto vs, sayd thus: Where my sonnes, diuide all, as betwæne you it shall be best agreed, and so rendered vp his ghost with a pitifull groane.

My brother, as one that knew his owne good & my humoz, gaue mee leaue to chose which bagge I liked: at the choice, I made no greate curiosity, but snatching the gold let goe the writings, which were as I knew, Cuidices for Land, Obligations for debt, too heauy for.

17049

Euphues and his England.

for mee to carry, who determined (as now thou dost Callimachus) to seeke aduentures. My purse now swelling with a tympany, I thought to search all Countries for a remedy, and sent many golden Angels into every quarter of the world, which neuer brought newes againe to their Master, being either soared into heauen, where I cannot fetch them, or sunke into hell for pride, where I meane not to follow them. This life I continued the space of fourteen yeeres, vntil I had visited and viewed euery country, and was a stranger in mine owne: but finding no treasure to bee swappd in trauell, I returned with more vices, then I went forth with pence; yet with so good a grace, as I was able to sinne both by experience and authority: vse framing me to the one, and the countries to the other. There was no crime so barbarous, no murder so bloody, no oath so blasphemous, no vice so execrable, but that I could readily recite whers I learned it, and by roat repeat the particular crime of euery particular countrey, city, towne, village, house, or chamber. If I met with one of Crete, I was ready to lie with him for the whetstone. If with a Grecian, I could dissemble with Synon I could court it with the Italian, carouse with the Dutchman. I learned all kindes of poysons, yea, & such as were for the Popes holinesse. In Egypt I worshipped their spotted God at Memphis: in Turkey, the Mahomet: in Rome, their Masse: which gaue not onely a remission for my sinnes past without penance, but also a commission to sinne euer after without prejudice. There was no fashion but fitted my backe, no fancy but serued my turne. But now my barrell of gold which pride set abroach, Loue began to set a tilt, which in short time ranne so on the lees that the diuell daunted in the bottome, where hee found neuer a crosse. It were too tedious to vtter my whole life in this my pilgrimage, the remembrance whereof doth nothing but double my repentance. Then to grow to an end, I seeing my money wasted, my apparrell woone, my minde infected with as many vices, as my body with diseases, and my body with more maladies, then the Leopard with markes: having nothing for amends but a few broken languages, which serued mee in no more stead, then to see one meat serued in diuers dishes: I thought it best to returne into my native soile: where finding my brother as farre now to exceed others in wealth, as he did in wit, and that he had

Euphues and his England.

had gained more by thrift, then I could spend by pride, neither en-
uied his estate, nor pitied mine owne: but opened the whole course
of my youth, not thinking thereby to recouer that of him by request,
which I had lost my selfe by riot. For casting in my mind the mi-
sery of the world, with the mischiefes of my life, I determined from
that vnto my liues end, to lead a solitary life in this caine, which I
haue done the terms of full forty winters: from whence, neither
the earnest intreaty of my brother, nor the vaine pleasures of the
world could draw me, neither shall any thing but death.

Then my good Callimachus, record with thy selfe the inconueni-
entes that come by trauelling, when on the Seas euery storme shall
threaten death, and euery calme a danger, when either thou shalt
bee compelled to boord others as a pirate, or feare to be boarded of o-
thers as a Merchant: when at all times thou must haue the back of
an Asse to beare all, and the snout of a swine to say nothing, thy hand
on thy cappe, to shew reuerence to euery rascall, thy purse open to be
prodigall to euery Boozie, thy sword in thy sheath, not once daring
either to strike or ward; which maketh me think, that trauellers are
not onely framed not to commit iniuries, but also to take them.
Learne Callimachus of the bird Acanthis, who being bred in the
thistles, will lie in the thistles; and of the grasshopper, who being
sprung of the grasse, will rather die, then depart from the grasse. I
am of this mind with Homer, that as the snail that crept out of her
shel, was turned eftsones into a Load, and thereby was forced to
make a stole to sit on, disdainig her owne house: so the traueller
that straggleth from his owne country, is in short time transfozmed
into so monstrous a shape, that he is faine to alter his mansion with
his manners, and to liue where he can, not where hee would. What
did Vlysses wish in the midst of al his trauelling, but onely to see the
smoke of his owne chimney? Did not all the Romanes say that hee
that wandered, did nothing else but heape sorrowes to his friends,
and shame to himselfe, and resembled those that seeking to light a
linke, quenched a lamp: imitating the barbarous Gothes, who
thought the roots in Alexandria, sweeter then the Reisons in Barba-
rie. In my opinion it is a homely kinde of dealing, to preferre the
courtesie of those he neuer knew, before the honesty of those among
whom he was borne: he that cannot liue with a groat in his owne
Country,

17049

Euphues and his England.

Countrey, shall neuer inioy a penny in another nation :

Little dost thou know, Callimachus, with what wood travellers are warmed, who must sleepe with their eyes open, lest they be slaine in their beds; and wake with their eyes shut, lest they bee suspected in their looks, and eat with their mouthes close, lest they bee poisoned with their meats. Where, if they be wealthy, they shall bee enuied, not loued: if poore, punished, not pitied: if wise, accounted espials, if foolish, made drudges. Euery gentleman will be their pere, though they be noble, and euery peasant their Lord, if they be gentle. He therefore that leaueth his owne house, to seeke aduentures, is like the Quail, that forsaketh the Hallowes to eat Hemlocke; or the Flie, that shineth the Rose, to light in a Colward.

So, Callimachus, there wil no mosse stick to the stone of Sisyphus, no grasse hang on the heeles of Mercurie, no butter cleave on the bread of a traveller. For as the Eagle at euery flight loseth a fether, which maketh her bauld in her age: so the Traveller in euery countrey loseth some fleece, which maketh him a beggar in his youth, by buying that with a pound he cannot sell againe for a penny, Repentance. But why go I about to dissuade thee from that, which I my selfe followed, or to perswade thee to that which thou thy selfe fliest? My gray hairs are like vnto a white frost, thy red blood not vnlike vnto hot fire: so that it cannot be, that either thou shouldst follow my counsell, or I allow thy conditions: such a quarrell hath there alwaies beene betwene the graue and the cradle; that hee that is yong, thinketh the old man fond, and the old knoweth the yong man to be a foole. But Callimachus, for the towardnesse I see in thee, I must needs loue thee, and for thy forwardnesse, of force counsell thee, and doe in the same sort as Phœbus did the daring boy Phaeton. Thou goest about a greater matter, neither fit for thy yeeres, being very yong, nor thy profit, being left so poore, that desirest that which thou knowest not, neither can any performe that which thou seemest to promise. If thou couet to trauell strange countries, search the Mays: there shalt thou see much, with great pleasure and small paines: if to bee conuersant in all courts, read histories, where thou shalt vnderstand both what the men haue beene, and what their maners are: and me thinketh there must be much delight when there is no danger. And if thou haue any care either of the
greene

Euphues and his England.

greene bud, which springeth out of the tender stalke, or the timely fruit which is to grow of so good a root, seeke to kill the one, or hasten the other: but let time so worke, that grafts may be gathered on the tree, rather than stickes to burne. And so I leaue thee, not to thy selfe, but to him that made thee, who guide thee with his grace, whether thou goest as thou wouldest, or tarrie at home as thou shouldest.

Callimachus obstinate in his fond conceit, was so far from being perswaded by this old Hermit, that he rather made it a greater occasion of his pilgrimage, and with an answer, betwene scozning and reasoning, he replied thus:

Father or friend (I know not very well how to terme you) I haue bene as attentue to heare your good discourse, as you were willing to vtter it: yet mee thinketh you deale maruellously with youth in seeking by sage counsell to put gray hairs on their chins, before nature hath giuen them almost any haire on their heads: wherein you haue gone so farre, that in my opinion your labour had been better spent, in traouelling where you haue not liued, than in talking where you cannot be beleued. You haue bin a traoueller, and tasted nothing but sorrow, therefore whosoever trauelleth, shall eat of the same sauce: an argument it is, that your fortune was ill, not that others should be as bad; and a warning to make you wise, not a warning to proue others vnforsunate. Shall a souldier that hath receiued a skar in the battell giue out that all warriours shall bee mained: or the Merchant that hath lost by the seas, be a cause that no other should venture: or a traoueller that hath sustained harne by sinister fortune, or bene infected by his owne follie, dissuade all gentlemen to rest at their owne home, till they come to their long home? Why then let all men abstaine from wine, because it made Alexander tipsie; let no man loue a woman, for that Tarquine was banished: let not a wise man play at all, for that a foole hath lost all: which in my mind would make such melody, that we should be inforced to leaue things that were best, for feare they may be bad; and that were as fond, as not to cut ones meat with that knife that another hath cut his finger. Things are not to be iudged by the euent, but by the end; nor traouelling to be condemned by yours or manies vnluckie successe, but by the common and most

64041

Euphues and his England.

Countrey, shall neuer inioy a penny in another nation :

Little dost thou know, Callimachus, with what wood travellers are warmed, who must sleepe with their eyes open, lest they be slaine in their beds; and wake with their eyes shut, lest they bee suspected in their looks, and eat with their mouthes close, lest they bee poisoned with their meats. Where, if they war wealthy, they shall bee enuied, not loued : if poore, punished, not pitied; if wise, accounted espiails, if foolish, made drudges. Euery gentleman will be their pere, though they be noble, and euery peasant their Lord, if they be gentle. He therfore that leaueth his olone house, to seeke aduentures, is like the Quail, that forsaketh the Hallowes to eat Hemlocke; or the flie, that shunneth the Rose, to light in a Colowhard.

So, Callimachus, there wil no mosse stick to the stone of Sisyphus, no grasse hang on the heeles of Mercurie, no butter cleaue on the bread of a traveller. For as the Eagle at euery flight loseth a fether, which maketh her bauld in her age : so the Traveller in euery countrey loseth some piece, which maketh him a beggar in his youth, by buying that with a pound he cannot sell againe for a penny, Repentance. But why go I about to dissuade thee from that, which I my selfe followed, or to perswade thee to that which thou thy selfe fliest ? My gray hairs are like vnto a white frost, thy red blood not vnlike vnto hot fire : so that it cannot be, that either thou shouldst follow my counsell, or I allow thy conditions : such a quarrell hath there alwaies beene betwene the graue and the cradle; that hee that is yong, thinketh the old man fond, and the old knoweth the yong man to be a foole. But Callimachus, for the towardnesse I see in thee, I must needs loue thee, and for thy forwardnesse, of force counsell thee, and doe in the same sort as Phcebus did the daring boy Phaeton. Thou goest about a greater matter, neither fit for thy yeeres, being very yong, nor thy profit, being left so poore, that desirest that which thou knowest not, neither can any performe that which thou seemest to promise. If thou couet to travell strange countries, search the Maps : there shalt thou see much, with great pleasure and small paines : if to bee conuersant in all courts, read histories, where thou shalt vnderstand both what the men haue beene, and what their maners are: and me thinketh there must be much delight when there is no danger. And if thou haue any care either of the
greene

Euphues and his England.

greene bud, which springeth out of the tender stalke, or the timely fruit which is to grow of so good a root, seeke to kill the one, or hasten the other: but let time so worke, that grafts may be gathered on the tree, rather than stickes to burne. And so I leaue thee, not to thy selfe, but to him that made thee, who guide thee with his grace, whether thou goest as thou wouldest, or farre at home as thou shouldest.

Callimachus obstinate in his fond conceit, was so far from being perswaded by this old Hermit, that he rather made it a greater occasion of his pilgrimage, and with an answer, betwene scorning and reasoning, he replied thus:

Father or friend (I know not very well how to terme you) I haue bene as attentive to heare your good discourse, as you were willing to utter it: yet mee thinketh you deale maruellously with youth in seeking by sage counsell to put gray hairs on their chins, before nature hath giuen them almost any haire on their heads: wherein you haue gone so farre, that in my opinion your labour had been better spent, in traueilling where you haue not liued, than in talking where you cannot be beleued. You haue bin a trauelier, and tasted nothing but sorrowe, therefore whosoever trauelleth, shall eat of the same sauce: an argument it is, that your fortune was ill, not that others should be as bad; and a warning to make you wise, not a warning to proue others vnforsunate. Shall a souldier that hath receiued a skar in the battell giue out that all warriours shall bee mained: or the Merchant that hath lost by the seas, be a cause that no other should venture: or a trauelier that hath sustained harne by sinister fortune, or bene infected by his owne follie, dissuade all gentlemen to rest at their owne home, till they come to their long home? Why then let all men abstaine from wine, because it made Alexander tipsie; let no man loue a woman, for that Tarquine was banished: let not a wise man play at all, for that a foole hath lost all: which in my mind would make such melody, that we should be inforced to leaue things that were best, for feare they may be bad; and that were as fond, as not to cut ones meat with that knife that another hath cut his finger. Things are not to be iudged by the euent, but by the end; nor traueilling to be condemned by yours or manies vnluckie successe, but by the common and most

17041

Euphues and his England.

approued wisdom of those that can better shew what it is then I, and will better speake of it then you doe.

Where you allege Vlysses, that he desired nothing so much as to see the smoke of Ithaca, it was not because he loued not to trauell, but that he longed to see his wife after his trauell: and greater commendation brought his trauell to him then his wit: the one taught but to speake, the other what he should speak. And in this you turne the point of your own bodkin into your owne bosome. Vlysses was no lesse esteemed for knowledge hee had of other countries, then for the reuenues he had in his owne. And where in the end you seeme to referre me to the viewing of Maps, I was neuer of the mind, to make my ship in a painters shop: which is like those that haue great skill in a wooden Globe, but neuer behold the sky. And he that seeketh to be a cunning traeller by seeing the maps, and an expert Astronomer by turning the Globe, may be Apprentise for Apelles, but no Page for Vlysses.

Another reason you bring, that traueilling is costly: I speake for my selfe, he that hath a little to spend, hath not much to lose, and hee that hath nothing in his owne countrey cannot haue lesse in any.

Would you haue me spend the flower of my youth, as you do the withered race of your age? Can the faire bud of youth creepe into the ground, as it were frost-bitten? no father Hermit, I am of Alexanders mind, if there were as many worlds, as there bee cities in the world, I would neuer leaue vntill I had seene all the worlds, and each city in euery world. Therfore to be short, nothing shall alter my mind, neither penny, nor Pater noster.

This old man seeing him so resolute, resolved to let him depart, and gaue him this farewell.

My good son, though thou wilt not suffer mee to perswade thee, yet shalt thou not let me to pity thee, yea and to pray for thee: but the time will come, when comming home by weeping crosse, thou shalt confesse that it is better to bee at home in the caue of an Hermit then abroad in the court of an Emperour, and that a crust with quietnesse, shall be better then Quailles with vnrest.

And to the end thou maist proue my sayings as true, as I know thy selfe to be wilfull, take the paines to returne to this poore cell, where

Euphues and his England.

where thy fate shal be amended, if thou amend thy fault: & so farewell.

Callimachus courteously took his leaue, and went his way: but we wil not leaue him vntil we haue him againe at the Cell, where wee found him.

Now Philautus and gentlemen all, suppose that Callimachus had as ill fortune as euer had any, his minde infected with his body, his time consumed with his treasure: nothing won, but that he cannot lose, though he wold, Misery. You must imagine (because it were too long to tell all his iourney) that he was sea sicke, as thou beginnest to be Philautus, that he hardly escaped death, that hee endured hunger and cold, heat without drinke, that hee was intangled with women, intrapped, deceiued, that euery stole he sate on was penilless bench, that his robes were rags, that hee had as much need of a chirurghion as a Physitian; and that thus he came home to the Cell, and with shame and sorrow began to say as followeth:

I finde too late, yet at length, that in age there is a certain foresight which youth cannot search, and a kinde of experience, vnto which vnripened yeeres cannot come, so that I must of necessity confesse, that youth neuer reigneth well, but when age holdeth the bridle: you see (my good father) what I would say by outward shew, and I need not tell before I haue tried, because before you told me I should find it: this I say, that whatsoeuer misery happened either to you, or any, the same hath chaced to me alone, I can say no more, I haue tried no lesse. The old Hermite glad to see this ragged Colt returned, yet grieved to see him so tormented, thought not to adde sorrow words to augment his sharpe woes, but taking him by the hand and sitting downe, began after a solemne manner from the beginning to the end, to discourse with him of his fathers affairs, euen after the sort that I before rehearsed, and deliuered vnto him his money, thinking now that misery would make him thristy, desiring also that as well for the honour of his fathers house, as his owne credit, he would returne againe to the Island, and there bee a comfort to his friends, and a reliefe to his poore neighbors, which would bee more worth then his wealth, and a fulfilling of his Fathers last will.

Callimachus, not a little pleased with this tale, and I thinke not

17049

Euphues and his England.

much displeased with the gold, gaue such thanks as to such a friend apperteined, and following the counsell of his vncle, which euer after he obeyed as a commandement, hee came to his owne house, liued long with great wealth, and as much worship as any one in Scyrum, and whether he be now liuing I know not: but whether he be or not, it skilleth not.

Now, Philaurus, I haue told this tale to this end, not that I thinke trauellling to be ill, if it be vsed well, but that such aduice bee taken, that the horse carry not his owne bridle, nor youth rule himselfe in his owne conceits. Besides that, such places are to be chosen, where in to inhabit, that are as commendable for vertue, as buildings: where the manners are more to bee marked, then the men scene. And this was my whole drift, either neuer to trauell, or so to trauell, that although the purse be weakened, the mind may be strengthened. For not he that hath scene most countries is most to be esteemed, but he that learned best conditions: for not so much is the situation of the places to bee noted, as the vertues of the persons. Which is contrary to the common practise of our traellers, who goe either for gaine, and retorne without knowledge; or for fashion sake, and come home without piety; whose estates are as much to be lamented, as their follies are to be laughed at: this causeth youth spend their golden time without either praise or profit, pretending a desire of learning, when they only follow loitering. But I hope our trauell shall bee better employed, seeing vertue is the white wee shoot at, not vanitie: neither the English tongue (which is as I haue heard almost barbarous) but the English manners, which as I thinke are most precise. And to thee Philaurus, I beginne to addresse my speech, hauing made an end of my Hermits tale: and if these few precepts I giue thee be obserued, then doubt not but we both shall learne that we best like. And these they are:

AT thy comming into England bee not too inquisitiue of newes, neither curious of matters of state: in assemblies aske no question, either concerning manners, or men. Bee not too lanish of thy tongue, either in causes of weight, lest thou shew thy selfe an espial, or in wanton talke, lest thou proue thy selfe a foole.

Euphues and his England.

It is the nature of that Country to list strangers: every one that shaketh thee by the hand is not ioined to thee in heart.

They thinke Italians wanton, and Grecians subtil: they will trust neither, they are are so incredulous: but undermine both, they are so wise. Be not quarrellous for every light occasion: they are impatient in their anger of any equall, ready to reuenge an iniury, but neuer wont to proffer any: they neuer fight without prouoking; and once prouoked they neuer cease.

Beware thou fall not into the snares of loue: the women there are wise, the men craftie: they will gather loue by thy looks, and picke thy minde out of thy hands. It shall bee there better to heare what they say, then to speake what thou thinkest; they haue long eares and short tongues; quicke to heare, and slow to utter: broad eies and light fingers, ready to espy, and apt to strike. Euery stranger is a marke for them to shoot at: yet thus must I say, which in no Country I can tell the like, that it is as seldome to see a stranger abused there as it is rare to see any well vsed elsewhere: yet presume not too much of the courtesies of them, for they differ in nature, some are hot, some cold, one simple, another wily: yet if thou vse few words, and faire speeches, thou shalt command them any thing thou standest in need of.

Touching the situation of the soile, I haue read in my studie, which I partly belieue (hauing no worse author than Caesar) yet at my conning when I shall conferre the things I see, with those I had read, I will iudge accordingly. And thus haue I heard that the inward part of Britane is inhabited by such as were borne and bred in the Isle, and the Sea coast by such as haue passed thither out of Belgicke to search boats and to make warre.

The Country is maruellously replenished with people, and there be many buildings, almost like in fashion to the buildings of Gallia. There is great store of cattel: the coine they vse, is either of Brasse, or also rings of iron, sised at a certaine waight in stead of Money. In the inner parts of the Realme groweth Tinne, and in the sea coast groweth iron. The Brasse that they occupie is brought in from beyond sea: The aire is more temperate in those places then in France, and the cold lesser. The Island is in fashion three cornered, whereof one side is towards France: the one corner of this
God

Euphues and his England.

side which is Kent, where for the most part ships arive out of France, is in the East, and the other neathermost is toward the south: This side containeth about five hundred miles. Another side lieth toward Spain and the Sun going downe, on the which side is Ireland, lesse then Britane, as is supposed, by the one halfe: but the cut betwene them is like the distance that is betwene France & Britane. In the midst of this course is an Island called Man, the length of this side is, (according to the opinion of the inhabiteurs) seven hundred miles. The third side is Northward, and against it lieth no land, but the point of the side butteth most vpon Germany. This they esteemed to be eight hundred miles long: and so the circuit of the whole Island, is two thousand miles. Of all the inhabitants of this Isle, the Kentishmen are the civilest, the which country marcheth altogether vpon the sea, and differeth not greatly from the manner of France. They that dwell moze in the heart of the realme sowe corne, but live by milke and flesh, and cloth themselves in leather. All the Britanes do dye themselves with woad, which setteth a blewish colour vpon them, and maketh them moze terrible to behold in battell. They weare their haire long, and haue all parts of their body, saving the head and the upper lip. Diuers other vses and customes are among them, as I haue read, Philautus: But whether these be true or no, I will not say: for mee thinketh an Island so wel gouerned in peace then, and so famous in victories, so fertile in all respects, so wholsome and populous, must needs in the terme of a thousand yeres be much better, and I beleue we shall find it such, as we neuer read the like of any; vntill we arive there wee will suspend our iudgements: yet doe I meane at our returne from thence to draw the whole description of the land, the customes, the nature of the people, the state, the government, and whatsoeuer deserueth either maruell or commendation.

Philautus, not accustomed to those narrow Seas, was moze ready to tell what wood the ship was made of, then to answer to Euphues discourse: yet betwene waking and winking, as one halfe sick and somewhat sleepe, as came in his braines, answered thus: In faith Euphues, thou hast told a long tale, the beginning I haue forgotten, the middle I vnderstand not, and the end hangeth not together: therfore I cannot repeate it as I would, or delight in it as

Euphues and his England.

I ought: yet if at our arrivall thou wilt renew thy tale, I will rub my memorie: in the meane season, would I were either againe in Italie, or now in England: I cannot b:oke these seas which prouoke my stomacke sore, I haue an appetite, it were best for me to take a nap, for every word is brought forth with a nod. Euphues replied, I cannot tell, Philautus, whether the sea make thee sicke, or shee that was borne of the sea: if the first, thou hast a queasie stomacke: if the latter, a wanton desire. I well beleene thou remembrest nothing that may doe thee good, nor forgettest any thing which can doe thee harme, making more of a sore than of a plaister, and w:hing rather to be cursed then cured: wherein thou agreeest with those, which hauing taken a surfet, seeke the meanes rather to sleepe than to purge; or those, that hauing the Greene sicknesse, and are brought to deaths doore, follow their owne humo:, and refuse the Physitions remedie. And such, Philautus, is thy disease, who pining in thine olve follie chocest rather to perish in loue, than to liue in wisdome: but whatsoeuer be the cause, I with the effect may answer my friendlie care: then doubtlesse thou shalt neuer die being sea sicke, or doat being loue sicke. I would the sea could as well purge thy minde of fond conceits, as thy bodie of grosse humours. Thus ending, Philautus againe began to v:ge.

Without doubt Euphues, thou doest me wrong, in seeking a skar in a smooth skin, thinking to stop a veine where none is opened, and to cast lone in my teeth, which I haue already spit out of my mouth; which I must needs thinke proceedeth rather for lacke of matter, than any good meaning, else wouldest thou neuer harpe on that string which is burst in my heart, and yet euer sounding in thy eares. Thou art like those that procure one to take Physicke before hee be sicke, and to applie a searecloth to his bodie when he feeleth no ache, or a vomit for his surfet, when his stomacke is emptye. If euer I fall to mine old biasse, I must put thee in the fault that talkest of it, seeing thou didst put me in the minde to think of it, wherby thou seemest to blow the cole which thou wouldest quench, setting keene edge where thou desirest not to haue a sharp point, imping a feather to make me flie, where thou oughtest rather to cut my wing for feare of soaring.

Lucilla is dead, and she vpon whom I ghesse thou harpest is forgotten,

Euphues and his England.

gotten, the one not to be redeemed, the other not to be thought on. Then good Euphues tying, not a horse on the withers with a false saddle, neither imagine what I am by my thoughts, but by mine owne doings: so shalt thou haue mee both willing to follow good counsell, and able hereafter to giue thee comfort. And so I rest halfe sleepe with the seas.

With this answer Euphues held himselfe content, but as much weary with talke as the other was with trauell, made a pillow of his hand; and there let them both sleepe their fill, and dreame with their fantasie, untill either a storme cause them to wake, or their hard beds, or their iournies end.

Thus for the space of an eight weekes Euphues and Philautus sailed on the seas, from the first shipping, betwene whom diuers speeches were vttered, which to recite were nothing necessarie in this place, and weighing the circumstances, scarce expedient: what tempests they endured, what strange sight in the Element, what monstrous fishes were seene, how often they were in danger of drowning, in feare of boarding, how wearie, how sicke, how angry, it were tedious to write; so that whosoever hath read of travelling, or hath himselfe vsed it, can sufficiently ghesse what is to bee said. And thus I leaue to the iudgement of those that in the like journey haue spent their time from Naples to England: for if I should saie more then others haue tried, I might be thought too Poeticall; if lesse, partiall.

Therefore I omit the Wonders, the Rockes, the Markes, the Gulfes, and whatsoever they passed or saw, lest I should trouble diuers with things they know, or may shame my selfe with things I know not.

Let this suffice, that they are safelie come within a ken of Douer, which the Master espying, with a cheerefull voice, waking them, began to vtter these words vnto them:

Gentlemen and friends, the longest summers day hath his euening. Vlysses arriueh at last, and rough windes in time bring the Ship to safe Road. We are now within foure hours sayling of the Hauen, and as you will thinke, of an earthly Heauen. Wonder white Clifles, which easily you may perceiue, are Douer hilles, whereunto is adioyning a strong and famous Castle, into the which

Julius

Euphues and his England.

Julius Cæsar did enter, where you shall view many goodly monuments, both strange and ancient.

Therefore pull vp your hearts; this merrie wind will immediately bring vs to an easie bait.

Philautus was glad he slept so long, and was awaked in so good time, being as wearie of the Seas, as he that neuer vsed them.

Euphues not so sorrowfull of this good newes, began to shake his eares, and was sone apparelled. To make short, the windes were so fauourable, the Mariners so skillfull, the way so short, that I feare me they will land before I can describe the manner how, and therefore suppose them now in Douer Towne, in the noble Isle of England, somewhat benighted, and more apt to sleepe then sup, yet so for maners sake they entertained their Master, and the rest of the Merchants and mariners; where hauing in due time both recorded their trauell past, and ended their repast, euery one went to his lodging, where I will leaue them soundly sleeping, vntill the next day.

The next day they spent in viewing the castles of Douer, the Bire, the Clifles, the Road, and Towne, receiuing as much pleasure by the sight of ancient monuments, as by their courteous entertainment, as lesse praising the persons for their good mindes, then the place for their goodly buildings: and in this sort they refreshed themselves three or foure daies, vntill they had digested the Seas, and recouered againe their healths, yet so warily they behaued themselves as they were neuer heard, either to enquire of any newes, or point at any Fortresse, beholding the Bulwarkes with a sleight and carelesse regard, but the other places of peace with admiration.

Follie it were to shew what they saw, seeing hereafter in the description of England it shall most manifestly appeare.

But I will set them forward in their iourney, where now within this two houres we shall finde them in Canterburie.

Travelling thus like two Pilgrimes, they thought it most necessarie to direct their steppes towards London, which they heard was the most royall seat of the Queene of England. But first they came to Canterburie, an olde Citie, somewhat decayed, yet beautiful to behold, most famous for a Cathedrall Church, the be-
rie Maiestie whereof strooke them into a maze, where they saw

Euphues and his England.

many monuments, & heard tel of greater than either they euer saw, or easily could beleue. After they had gone long, seeing themselves almost benighted, determined to make the next house their Anne, and espying in their way euen at hand, a very pleasant garden, drew nere; where they saw a comely old man, as busie as a Bee, among his Bees, whose countenance bewaied his conditions: this ancient Father, Euphues greeted in this maner:

Father, if the courtesie of England be answerable to the custome of Pilgrimes, then will the nature of the countrey excuse the boldnesse of strangers: our request is to haue such entertainment, being almost tired with trauell, not as diuers haue for acquaintance, but as all men haue for their money: which courtesie if you graunt, we will euer remaine in your debt, although euery way discharge our due: and rather we are importunate the for that we are no lesse delighted with the pleasures of your garden, then the sight of your granitie. Unto whom the old man said:

Gentlemen, you are no lesse I perceiue by your manners, and you can be no more being but men: I am neither so incourteous to mislike your request, nor so suspicious to mistrust your truthes, although it be no lesse perillous to be secure, then perillous to be curious. I keepe no victualling, yet is mine house an Anne, and I am hoast for euery honest man, so farre as they with courtesie will, and I may with abilitie. Your entertainment shall be as small for cheare, as your acquaintaine is for time; yet in my house you may happilie find some one thing cleanly, nothing courtly: for that wisdome prouideth things necessarie, not superfluous: and age seeketh rather a modicum for sustenance, than feasts for surfets. But untill something may be made readie, might I be so bold as enquire your names, countries, and the cause of your pilgrimage: wherein if I shall be more inquisitiue than I ought, let my rude birth satisfie my bold request, which I will not vize as one importunate (I might saie) impudent.

Euphues seeing this fatherlie and friendlie Sire (whom we will name Fidus) to haue no lesse inward courtesie, than outward comelinesse, coniectured (as well he might) that the proffer of his bountie noted the noblenesse of his birth, being well assured, that as no Thersues could be transfozmed into Vlysses, so no Alexander could be

Euphues and his England.

be couched in Damocles. Thinking therefore now with more care and aduise ment to temper his talke, lest either he might seeme foolish or curious, hee answered him in these termes:

God Sir, you haue bound vs vnto you with a double chaine, the one, in pardoning our presumption, the other, in granting our petition. Which great and vnderfetched kindnesse, though we cannot requite with the like, yet if occasion shall serue, you shall finde vs hereafter as willing to make amends, as we are now readie to giue thanks. Touching your demands, we are not so vnwise to mislike them, or so vngatefull to deny them, lest in concealing our names, it might be thought for some trespasse, and couering our pretence, we might be suspected of treason. I know you then sir, that this Gentleman my fellow, is called Philaenus, & Euphues: he an Italian, & a Grecian, both swoorne friends by iust triall, both Pilgrimes by free will. Concerning the cause of our comming into this Iland, it was onely to glew our Eyes to our Cares, that we may iustifie those things by sight, which we haue oftentimes with incredible admiration vnderstood by hearing: to wit, the rare qualities as well of the bodie as the minde, of your most dread soueraigne and Quene, the byrte of the which hath filled euery corner of the world, in so much as there is no thing that moueth either more matter or more maruell then hir excellent Maiesty. Which fame when we saw without comparison, and almost aboue credit, we determined to spend some part of our time and treasure in the English Court, where if I could find the report but to be true in halfe, we should not onely thinke our money and trauell well imployed, but returned with interest more then infinite. This is the onely end of our coming, which we are nothing fearefull to utter, trusting as well to the courtesie of your Countrey, as to the equity of our cause.

Touching the Court, if you can giue vs any instruction, we shall thinke the evening well spent: which procuring our delight, may no way worke our disliking.

Gentlemen (answered this old man) if because I entertaine you, you seeke to vndermine me, you offer me great discourtesie: you must needs thinke me very simple, or your selues very

17041

Euphues and his England.

subtle, if vpon so small acquaintance I should answer to such demands, as are neither for me to vtter being a subiect, nor for you to know being strangers. I keepe hiues for Bees, not houses for busie bodie (pardon me Gentlemen, you haue moued my patience) and more welcoms shall a waspe be to my honey, then a priuie enemy to my house. If the rare report of my most gracious Ladie haue brought you hither, mee thinketh you haue done very ill to chuse such a house to confirme your minds, as seemeth more like a prison then a palace, whereby, in my opinion, you meane to derogate from the worthinesse of the person by the vilenesse of the place, which argueth your pretences to fauour of malice more then honest meaning. They vse to consult of loue in the Capitoll: of Caesar in the Senate: of our Queene in her owne Court. Besides that, Alexander must bee painted of none but Apelles, nor engrauen of any but Lysippus, nor our Elizabeth set forth of euery one that would in duetie, which are all, but of those that can in skill, which are few: so farre hath nature overcome Art, and Grace Eloquence, that the Painter draweth a vaile ouer that he cannot shadow, and the Orator holdeth a paper in his hand, for that he cannot vtter. But whither am I wandring, rapt farther by deuotion, then I can wade thorow with discretion? Cease Gentlemen, and know this, that an English man learneth to speake of men, and to hold his peace of the Gods. Enquire no farther then becometh you, lest you heare that which cannot like you. But if you thinke the time long before your repast, I will finde some talke which shall breed you delight, touching my Bees.

And here Euphues brake him off, and replied, though not as bitterly as he would, yet as roundly as he durst, in this manner.

We are not a litle soze for, not that we haue opened our mindes, but that we are taken amisse, and when we meane so well, to be intreated so ill: hauing talked of no one thing, vnlesse it be of good will towards you, whom we reuerence for age: and of dutie towards your Soueraigne, whom we maruelled at for vertue: which good meaning of ours misconstrued by you, hath bred such a distemperature in our heads, that we are fearefull to praise her whom all the world extolleth: and suspicious to trust you, whom aboue any in the world we loued.

And

Euphues and his England.

And whereas your greatest argument is, the basenesse of your house, me thinketh that maketh most against you. Caesar neuer reioyced more then when he heard that they talked of his valiant exploits in simple cottages, alleging this; That a bright Sunne shineth in euery corner, which maketh not the beames worse, but the place better. When (as I remember) Agexilaus sonne was set at the lower end of the table, and one cast it in his teeth as a shame, he answered: This is the vpper end where I sit; for it is not the place that maketh the person, but the person that maketh the place honorable. When it was told Alexander that he was much praised of a Miller, I am glad (quoth he,) that there is not so much, as a miller but loueth Alexander.

Among other tales I call to my remembrance one not long, but apt, and as simple as it is, so fit it is, that I cannot omit it for the opportunitie of the time, though I might ouerleape it for the basenesse of the matter. When all the birds were appointed to meet, to talke of the Eagle, there was great contention at whose nest they should assemble, euery one willing to haue it at his owne home, one preferring the nobility of his birth, another the statelinessse of his building: some would haue it for one quality, some for another: at the last the Swallow said they should come to his nest, beeing comunonly of filth, which all the Birds disdaining, said; Why, thy house is nothing else but dirt. And therefore (answered the Swallow) would I haue talke there of the Eagle: for being the basest, the name of an Eagle will make it the braneest. And so (good father) may I say of thy Cottage, which thou seemest to account of so homely, that mooring but speech of thy Soueraigne, it will be more like a Court then a cabbine; and of a prison, the name of Elizabeth will make it a palace.

The Image of a Prince stampd in Copper, goeth as currant: and a Crow may cry Aue Caesar without any rebuke.

The name of a Prince is like the sweet deaw, which falleth as well vpon low shrubs as high trees, and resembleth a true glasse, wherein the poore may see their faces with the rich: or a cleere streame, wherein all may drinke that are drie, not they onely that are wealthy.

Where you adde, that we should feare to moue any occasion touching

17041

Euphues and his England.

touching talke of so noble a Prince, truly our reuerence taketh away the feare of suspicion.

The Lambe feareth not the Lion, but the Wolfe, the Partridge dreadeth not the Eagle, but the Hawke: a true and faithfull heart standeth more in awe of his superiour whom he loueth for feare, then of his Prince whom he feareth for loue. A cleere conscience needeth no excuse, nor feareth any accusation.

Lastly, you conclude, that neither art nor heart can so set forth your noble Queene as she deserueth. I grant it, and reioyce at it, and that is the cause of our coming to see her, whom none can sufficiently commend: and yet doth it not follow, that because we cannot giue her as much as she is worthy of, therefore we should not owe her any. But in this wee will imitate the old Painters in Greece, who drawing in their Tables the portraiture of Iupiter, were every houre mending it, but durst neuer finish it.

And being demanded why they began that which they could not end, they answer, In that we shew him to be Iupiter: whom every one may begin to paint, but none can perfect. In the like manner meane we to draw in part the praises of her, whom we cannot thoroughly portray, and in that we signifie her to be Elizabeth: who inforceth every man to doe as much as he can, when in respect of her perfection it is nothing.

For as he that beholdeth the Sun stedfastly, thinking thereby to describe it more perfectly, hath his eyes so dazeled that he can discern nothing; so saith it with those that seeke maruellously to praise those that are without the compasse of their iudgement, and all comparison, that the more that they desire, the lesse they discern; and the neerer they thinke themselves in good will, the farther they finde themselves off in wisdome, thinking to measure that by an inch which they cannot reach with an ell. And yet farther, it can be neither hurtfull to you, nor hatefull to your Prince, to heare the commendation of a stranger, or to answer his honest request, who will wish in heart no lesse glory to him than you doe, although they can wish no more. And therefore more thinketh you haue offered a little discourtesie, not to answer vs, and to suspect vs, great iniurie: hauing neither might to attempt any thing which may doe you harme, nor malice to reuenge where we finde helpe.

Euphues and his England.

For mine owne part this I say, and for my friend present, the like I dare sweare, how boldly I cannot tell, how truly I know; that there is not any one, whether he be bound by benefit or duetie, or both: whether linked by zeale, or time, or blood, or al; that more humbly reuerenceth her Maiesty, or maruellet at her wisdom, or praiseth for her long prosperous & glorious raigne, than we: then whom we acknowledge, none more simple, and yet dare avow, none more faithfull. Which we speake not to get seruice by flattery; but to acquit our selues of suspition by faith: which is al that either a Prince can desire of his subiect, or a vassal yeld to his soueraigne, and that which we ow to your Quene, and al others should offer, that either for fear of punishment dare not offend, or for loue of vertue wil not.

Here old Fidus interrupting yong Euphues, being almost induced by his talke to answer his request, yet as one neither too credulous, nor altogether mistrustfull, he replied as a friend, and so wisely as he glanced from the marke Euphues shot at, and hit at the last the white which Philautus set vp, as shall appeare hereafter. And thus he began:

My sonnes (mine age giueth me the priuelege of that terme, and your honesties cannot refuse it) you are too yong to vnderstand matters of state: and were you elder to know them, it were not for your estates. And therefore mee thinketh the time were but lost, in pulling Hercules shoe vpon an Infants foot, or in setting Atlas burthen on a childes shoulders, or to bruise your backs with the burthen of a whole kingdome: which I speake not, that either I mistrust you, (for your reply hath resolved that feare) or that I malice you (for my good will may cleere me of that fault) or that I ~~read~~ your might (for your small power cannot bring me into such a follie) but that I haue learned by experience, that to reason of kings or Princes, hath euer bene much misliked of the wise, though much desired of fooles, especially where old men, which should be at their beads, be too busie with the Court: and young men, which should follow their booke, be too inquisitiue in the affaires of Princes. Wee should not looke at that wee cannot reach, nor long for that we should not haue: things aboue vs, are not for vs: and therefore are princes placed vnder the gods, that they should

¶

not

17041

Euphues and his England.

not see what they do, and we under Princes that we might not enquire what they doe: But as the foolish Eagle that seeing the Sun coueteth to build her nest in the Sun: so fond youth, which viewing the glory and gloriousnes of the Court, longeth to know the secrets of the Court. But as the Eagle burneth out her eyes with that proud lust: so doth youth breake his heart with foolish conceit. And as Satyrus not knowing what fire was, would needs embrace it, and was burned: so these fond Satyri not understanding what a Prince is, run boldly to meddle in those matters which they know not, and so feel worthily the heat they would not. And therefore good Euphues and Philautus, content your selues in this, that to bee curious in things you should not enquire of, if you know them, they appertaine not vnto you; if you knew them not, they cannot hinder you. And let Apelles answer to Alexander, bee an excuse for mee. When Alexander would needs come to Apelles shop and paint, Apelles placed him at his back, who going to his owne worke did not so much as cast an eye back, to see Alexanders deuises; which being well marked, Alexander said thus vnto him: Art not thou a cunning Painter, and wilt not ouerlooke my picture, and tell mee wherein I haue done well, and wherein ill: whom hee answered wisely yet merrily: In faith O King, it is not for Apelles to enquire what Alexander hath done, neither if he shew it me, to iudge how it is done, and therefore did I set your Maiesty at my backe, that I might not glance towards a kings worke, and that you looking ouer my head, might see mine, for Apelles shadowes are to be seene of Alexander, but not Alexanders of Apelles. So ought wee Euphues to frame our selues in all our actions and deuises as though the King stood ouer vs to behold vs, and not to looke what the King doth behind vs: For whatsoeuer he painteth, is for his pleasure, and wee must think for our profit: for Apelles had his reward though he saw not the worke.

I haue heard of a Magnifico in Millaine (and I thinke Philautus you being an Italian doe remember it) who hearing his sonne inquisitiue of the Emperours life and demeanour, reprehended him sharply, saying: that it becommed not one of his house to enquire how an Emperour liued, vnlesse he himselfe were an Emperour: for that the behauiour & vsage of so honozable personages are not to be called

Euphues and his England.

called in question of euery one that doubteth, but of such as are their equals.

Alexander beeing commanded of Philip his father, to wrestle in the games of Olympia, answered, hee would if there were a King to strue with him: whereby I haue noted (that others seeme to enforce) that as Kings pastimes are no playes for euery one, so their secrets, their counsels, their dealings, are not to be either scanned or enquired of any way, vntil of those that are in the like place, or serue the like person. I cannot tell whether it bee a Canturburie tale, or a fable in Actope, but prettie it is and true, in my minde: That the ffore and the wolfe going both a filching for food, thought it best to see whether the Lion were asleepe or awake, lest beeing too bold, they should speed for badde. The ffore entring into the Kings denne (a King I call the Lion) brought word to the Wolfe that hee was asleepe, and went himselfe to his owne kennell: the Wolfe desirous to search in the Lions denne, that hee might espie some fault, or steale some pray, entred boldly, whom the Lion caught in his pawes, and asked what he would: The sillie Wolfe (an vnapt terme for a wolfe, yet fit, being in a Lions hands) answered, that vnderstanding by the ffore, hee was a sleepe, hee thought he might be at liberty to suruey his lodging: vnto whom the princely Lyon, with great disdain, though little despight (for that there can bee no enuy in a King) said thus: Doest thou thinke that a Lion thy prince and gouernour can sleepe, though hee winke, or darest thou enquire whether hee winke or wake? The ffore had more craft then thou, and thou more courage (courage I will not say, but boldnesse: and boldnesse is too good, I may say desperatenesse) but you shall both well know, and to your griefes feelee, that neither the wilnesse of the ffore, nor the wilnesse of the Wolfe, ought either to see or aske, whether the Lion either sleepe or wake, bee at home or abroad, dead or aliue. For this is sufficient for you to know, that there is a Lion; not, where he is, or what he doth. In like manner Euphues, is the government of a Monarchie (though homely be the comparison, yet apt it is) that it is neither the wise ffore nor the malicious Wolfe, should venture so farre, as to learne whether the Lion sleepe or wake in his denne, whether the Prince fast, or feast in the Court:

17041

Euphues and his England.

but this should bee their order to vnderstand there is a King, but what he doth, is for the gods to examine, whose ordinance he is; not for men, whose ouersceer he is.

Then how vain is it Euphues (too milde a word for so mad a minde) that the foot should neglect his office, to correct the face; or that subjects should seeke more to know what their Princes doe, then what they are: wherein they shew themselves as bad as beasts, and much worse then my Bees, who in my conceit, though I may seem partial, obserue more order then they; and (if I might say so of my good Bees) more honesty: honesty my old grandfather called that, when men liued by law, not lust: obseruing in all things the meane, which we name vertue; and vertue we account nothing else, but to deale iustly and temperately.

And if I might craue pardon, I would a little acquaint you with the common-wealth of my Bees, which is neither impertinent to the matter we haue now in hand, nor tedious to make you weary.

Euphues delighted with the discourses of old Fidus, was content to heare any thing, so he might heare him speake something, and consenting willingly, he desired Fidus to go forward: who now removing himselfe neerer to the hives, began as followeth.

Gentlemen, I haue for the space of these twenty yeeres dwelt in this place, taking no delight in any thing, but onely in keeping my Bees, and marking them: and this I find, which had I not seen I should hardly haue beleued, that they vse as great wit by induction, & Art by workmanship, as euer man hath or can, vsing betwene themselves no lesse iustice then wisdom, and yet not so much wisdom as Maiestie: Insomuch as thou wouldest thinke that they were a kind of people, a common-wealth for Plato, where they all labour, all gather hony, flie all together in a swarm, eat in a swarme, and sleepe in a swarme: so neat and finelie, that they abhorre nothing so much as uncleannesse, drinking pure and cleare water, delighting in sweet and sound musicke, which if they heare but once out of tune, they flie out of sight: and therefore are they called the Muses birds, because they follow not the sound so much as the concent. They liue vnder a law, vsing great reuerence to their Elder, as to the wiser. They chouse a King, whose Palace they frame, both brauer in shew, and stronger in substance: whom if they finde

Euphues and his England.

finde to fall, they establish again in his Throne, with no lesse dutie then deuotion, garding him continually, as it were for fear he should miscarry, for loue he should not: whom they tender with such faith & fauour, that whither soener he flieth they follow him, and if hee cannot flie, they carry him; whose life they so loue, that they will not for his safety stick to die, such care haue they for his helth, on whom they build all their hope. If their Prince die, they know not how to liue, they languish, weepe, sigh, neither intending their worke, nor keeping their old society. And that which is most maruellous, and almost incredible: if there be any that hath disobeyed his commandements, either of purpose or unwittingly, hee killeth himselfe with his owne sting, as executioner of his owne stubbournesse. The King himselfe hath his sting which hee vseth rather for honour then punishment. And yet Euphues, albeit they liue vnder a Prince, they haue their priuilege, and as great liberties as strait lawes. They call a Parliament, wherein they consult for lawes, statutes, penalties, choosing officers, and creating their King, not by affection, but reason: not by the greater part, but the better. And if such a one by chance bee chosen (for among men sometimes the worst speed best) as is bad, then is there such ciuill warre and dissension, that vntill he be pluckt down, there can be no friendship: and ouerthwonne, there is no enmity, no fighting for quarrels, but quietnesse.

Euery one hath his office, some trimming the Honie, some working the War, one framing hiues, another the combes, and that so artificially, that Naxalus could not with greater art or excellency better dispose the orders, measures, proportions, distinctions, ioints, and circles. Diuers heat, others polish and are carefull to doe their worke so strongly, as they may resist the craft of such drones as seeke to liue by their labours, which maketh them to keepe watch and ward, as liuing in a camp to others, and as in a court to themselves. Such a care of chastity, that they neuer engender, such a desire of cleanness, that there is not so much as meat in all their hiues. When they goe forth to worke, they marke the winde, the clouds, and whatsoever doth threaten either their ruine or rage: and hauing gathered out of euery flower hony, they returne loaden in their mouthes, thighs, wings, and all the body, whom they that

Euphues and his England.

carried at home receiue readily, as easing their backs of so great burthens. The King himselfe not idle, goeth vp and downe intreating, threatening, commanding, vsing the counsell of a sequell, but not losing the dignitie of a pynce, preferring those that labor in greater authoritie, & punishing those that loiter with due seuerity. All which things being much admirable, yet this is most, that they are so profitable, bringing vnto man both honey & iware, each so wholesome, that we all desire it, both so necessarie, that we cannot misse them. Were Euphues is a common wealth, which oftentimes calling to my minde, I cannot chosse but commend aboue any that I haue either read or heard of. Where the King is not for euery one to talke of, where there is such homage, such loue, such labor, that I haue wished oftentimes rather to be a Bee, then not to be as I should be. In this little garden with these hives, in this house haue I spent the better part of my life, yea, and the best: I was neuer busie in matters of state, but referring all my cares vnto the wisdom of graue counsellors, and my confidence to the noble minde of my dread soueraigne and Quene, neuer asking what she did, but alwaies praying she may doe well, not inquiring whether she might do what she would, but thinking she would do nothing but what she might.

Thus contented with a meane estate, & neuer curious of the high estate, I found me such quiet, that me thinketh he which knoweth least, liueth longest; insomuch that I chosse rather to be an Hermit in a caue, then a counsellour in the Court.

Euphues perceiuing old Fidus to speake what he thought, answered him in these short words. He is very obstinate, whom neither reason nor experience can perswade. And truly seeing you haue all eged both, I must needs allow both. And if my former request haue bred any offense, let my latter repentance make amends. And yet this I know, that I enquired nothing that might bring you into danger, or me into trouble: For as young as I am, this I haue learned, that one may point at a starre, but not pull at it; and see a Prince, but not search him: and for mine owne part, I neuer meane to put mine hand betwene the barke and the tree, nor in matters which are not for mee, to be ouer-curious. The common-wealth of your Bees did so delight mee, that I was
not

Euphues and his England.

not a little sozie, that either their estates haue not beene longer
or your leasure more, for in my simple iudgement, there was such
an orderly gouernment, that men may not be ashamed to imitate
them, nor you weary to keepe them.

They hauing spent much time in these discourses, were called in
to supper. Philautus more willing to eat then heare their tales,
was not the last that went in: where being all set downe, they were
serued all in earthen dishes, all things so neat and cleankie, that
they perceiued a kinde of courtly maiestie in the mind of their host,
though he wanted matter to shew it in his house.

Philautus, I know not whether of nature melancholy, or feeling
one in his bosome, spake scarce ten words since his comming into
the house of Fidus. Which the old man well noting, began merri-
ly thus to parlie with him.

I Heruell Gentleman, that all this time you haue bene tongue-
tied, either thinking not your selfe welcome, or disdainning so
homely entertainment: in the one you do me wrong, for I thinke
I haue not shewed my selfe strange: for the other you must pardon
mee, for that I haue not to doe as I would, but as I may. And
though England bee no graunge, but yeldeth euery thing, yet is it
heeere as in euery place, all for money. And if you will but accept
a willing minde in stead of a costly repast, I shall thinke my selfe
beholding vnto you: and if time serue and my Bees prosper, I will
make you part of amends with a better breakfast.

Philautus thus replied: I know good father, my welcōme grea-
ter then any waies I can requite, and my chēere more bountifull
then euer I shall deserue, and though I seme silent for matters
that trouble me, yet I would not haue you thinke me so foolish, that
I should either disdaine your company, or mislike your chēere, of
both which I thinke so well, that if time might answer my
true meaning, I would exceed in cost, though in courtesie I know
not how to compare with you, for (without flatterie be it spoken) if
the common courtesie of England be no worse then this towarde
strangers, I must needes thinke them happie that trauell into these
Coasts, and the inhabitants the most courteous of all Countries.

Here began Euphues to take the talke out of Philautus mouth,
and to plaie with him in his melancholie mood, beginning thus:

Pa

17049

Euphues and his England.

No Father, I durst sweare for my friend, that both he thinketh himselfe welcome, & his fare good, but you must pardon a yong courtier, who in the absence of his Lady thinketh himselfe forlorne: And this vile dogge Loue wil so rankle where he biteth, that I feare my friends soze wil breed to a fistula: for you may perceiue that he is not where he liues, but where he loues; and more thoughts hath he in his head, than you Bees in your hiues: and better it were for him to be naked among your wasps, though his body were all blistered, than to haue his heart stung with affection, whereby he is so blinded. But beleue me Fidus, he taketh as great delight to course a cogitation of loue, as you do to vse your time with Honey. In this plight hath he been euer since his comming out of Naples, and so hath it wrought with him (which I had thought impossible) that pure loue did make him Sea sicke, insomuch as in all my trauell with him, I seemed to euery one to beare with me the picture of an honest man, but no liuing person; the more pitie, and yet no force.

Philautus taking Euphues tale by the end, and the old man by the arme, between grieve and game, iest & earnest, answered him thus:

Evphues would die if he should not talk of loue once in a day, and therefore you must giue him leaue after euery meale to close his stomack with loue, as with Charmalade: and I haue heard, not those that say nothing, but they that kickt oftneest against loue, are euer in loue: yet doth he vse mee as the meane to moue the matter, and as the man to make his mirrour, he himselfe knowing best the price of coyne, not by the market folks, but his owne footsteps. But if he vse his speech, either to make you merry, or to put me out of conceit, he doth well, you must thank him for the one, and I will thinke on him for the other. I haue oftentimes sware, that I am as far from loue as he: yet wil he not beleue me, as incredulous as those, who thinke none bald till they see his bzaines. As Euphues was making answer, Fidus preuented him in this manner:

There is no harme done Philautus: for whether you loue, or Euphues iest, this shall breed no farre. It may be when I was as yong as you, I was as idle as you (though in my opinion, there is none lesse idle then a louer.) For to tell the truth, I my selfe was once a courtier, in the daies of that most noble King of famous me-
more

Euphues and his England.

memoire Henry the eighth, father to our most gracious Ladie Elizabeth. Where, and with that he paused, as though the remembrance of his old life had stopped his new speech; but Philautus itching to heare what hee would saie, desired him to goe forward, vnto whom Fidus fetching a great sigh, said, I will. And there againe made a full point. Philautus burning, as it were, in desire of this discourse, vrged him againe with great intreatie: then the old man commanded the boord to be vncouered, grace being said, called for stooles, and sitting by the fire, vttered the whole discourse of his loue, which brought Philautus a bed, and Euphues asleepe. And now Gentlemen, if you will giue eare to the tale of Fidus, it may be some will be as watchfull as Philautus, though many as drouisie as Euphues. And thus he began with heauie countenance (as though his paines were present, not past) to frame his tale.

I Was bozne in the wild of Kent, of honest parents and worshipfull, whose tender cares (if the fondnesse of parents may bee so termed) prouided all things, euen from my very cradle, vntill their graues, that might either bring me vp in good letters, or make me heire to great liuings. I (without arrogancy be it spoken) was not inferiour in wit to many, which finding in my selfe, I flattered my selfe, but in the end deceiued my selfe: for being of the age of xx. yeeres, there was no trade or kinde of life, that either fitted my humour or serued my turne, but the Court: thinking that place the onely meanes to climbe high and sit sure. Wherein I followed the veine of young Souldiers, who iudge nothing sweeter then warre, till they feele the weight. I was there entertained as well by the great friends my father made, as by mine owne forwardnesse, where it being now but honey Moone, I endeouored to Court it with a grace, (almost past grace) laying more on my backe, than my friends could well beare, hauing many times a braue cloake, and a thread-bare purse. Who so conuersant with the Ladies as I: who so pleasant? who more prodigall? Insomuch as I thought the time lost which was not spent either in their companie with delight, or for their company in letters. Among all the troupe of gallant gentlemen, I singled out one (in whom I misliked nothing but his grauity) that aboue al I meant to trust: who as wel for the good
quali,

14049

Euphues and his England.

qualities he saw in me, as the little government he feared in me, began one night to utter these few words.

Friend Fidus (if fortune allow a tearme so familiar) I would I might live to see thee as wise, as I perceive thee witty, then should thy life bee so seasoned, as neither too much wit might make thee proud, nor too great riot poyse. My acquaintance is not great with thy person, but such insight haue I into thy conditions, that I feare nothing so much, as that there thou catch thy fall, where thou thinkest to take thy rising. There belongeth more to a Courtier then brauery, which the wise laugh at: or personage, which the chaste marke not: or wit, which the most part see not.

It is sober and discret behaviour, ciuill and gentle demeanour, that in Court winneth both credit and commodity: which counsell, thy vnripened yeeres thinke to proceed rather of the malice of age, than the good meaning.

To ride well is laudable, and I like it: to run at the tilt not amisse, and I desire it: to reuell, much to be praised, and I haue vsed it: which things, as I know them all to bee Courtly, so for my part I account them necessarie: for where greatest assemblies are of noble gentlemen, there should bee the greatest exercise of true nobilitie. And I am not so precise, but that I esteem it as expedient in seats of armes & actiuitie to imploy the body, as in study to waste the minde: yet so should the one be tempered with the other, as it might seeme as great a shame to be valiant and courtly without learning, as to be studious and bookish without valour.

But there is another thing, Fidus, which I am to warne thee of, and if I might, to wrest thee from: not that I enuy thy estate, but that I would not haue thee forget it. Thou v'sest too much (a little I thinke to be too much) to dally with women, which is the next way to doat on them. For as they that angle for the Torzois, hauing once caught him, are diuen into such a litherneesse, that they lose all, their spirits being benumbed, so they that seeke to obtaine the good will of Ladies, hauing once a litle hold of their loue, they are diuen into such a trance, that they let goe the hold of their liberty, bewitched like those that view the head of Medusa, or the viper tied to the bough of the beech tree, which keepeth him in a dead sleepe, though he begin with a sweet slumber.

Euphues and his England.

I my selfe haue tasted new wine, and finde it to be moze pleasant then wholsome: and grapes gathered befoze they be ripe, may set the eies on lust, but they make the teeth on edge: and lous desired in the bud, not knowing what the blossome were, may delight the conceit of the head, but it will destroy the contemplatiue of the heart.

What I speake now is of meere good will, and yet vpon smal presumption: but in things which come on the sudden, one cannot bee too wary to pzeuent, or too curious to mistrust: for thou art in a place, either to make thee hated for vice, or loued for vertue, and as thou reuerencest the one befoze the other, so in vprightnesse of life shew it. Thou hast good friends, which by thy leaud delights thou maist make great enemies: and heauy foes, which by thy doing wel, thou maist cause to bee earnest arbiters of thee, in matters that they now canuasse against thee. And so I leaue thee, meaning heer after to beare the reine of thy bydle in my hands, if I see thee headstrong. And so hee departed. I gaue him great thanks, and glad I was we were parted: for his putting loue in my minde, was like the thzowing of Buglosse into wine, which increaseth in him that drinke it a desire of lust though it mitigate the force of drunkenesse.

I now fetching a wine glasse, that I might better haue a shoot, was pzevented with ready game, which saued me some laboꝝ, but gained me no quiet. And I would, gentlemen, that you could feele the like impressions in your minds at the rehearsall of mishap, as I did passions at the entring into it. If euer you loued, you haue found the like: if neuer you loue, you shal taste no lesse. But he, so eager of an end, as one leaping ouer a stile befoze he come to it, desired few parentheses or digressions, or glosses, but the text where he himselfe was quoting in the margent. When said Fidus, thus it fell out: It was my chance (I know not whether chance or destiny) that being inuited to a banquet where many Ladies were, and too many by one, as the end tried, though then too many by all, sauing that one, as I thought, I cast mine eies so earnestly vpon her, that my heart bowed her the mistresse of my loue: and so fully was I resolved to prosecute my determination as I was earnest to begin it.

Now Gentlemen commit my cause to your considerations, being wiser than I was then, and somewhat (as I ghesse) elder: I was

Euphues and his England.

but in Court a novice, having no friend but him before rehearsed, whom in such a matter I was likelier to finde a bridle then a spur. I neuer before that time could imagine what loue should meane, but vsed the terme as a flout to others, which I found now as a seauer in my selfe: netther knowing from whence the occasion should arise, nor where I might seek the remedy. This distresse I thought youth would haue woꝛne out, by reason, or time, or absence, or if not euery one of them, yet all. But as fire getting hold in the bottome of a tree, neuer leaueth till it come to the top, or as strong poison Antydorum being but chased in the hand, pearceth at the last the heart: so loue which I kept but low, thinking at my will to leaue, entered at the last so far, that it held me conquered. And then disputing with my selfe, I plaied thus on the bit. Fidus, it standeth there vpon either to win thy loue or to weane thy affections; which choice is so hard, that thou canst not tell whether the victorie will be the greater in subduing thy selfe or conquering her. To loue and to liue well is wished to many, but incident to few. To loue and to liue well is incident to few, but indifferent to all. To loue without reason is an argument of lust: to liue without loue, a token of follie. The measure of loue is to haue no meane, the end to be euerlasting. Theseus had no need of Ariadnes thread to finde the way into the Labyrinth, but to come out, nor thou of any helpe how to fall into these bꝛakes, but to fall from them. If thou bee bewitched with eies, weare the eies of a weasel in a ring, which is an enchantment against such charmes: and reason with thy selfe whether there bee more pleasure to be accounted amorous or wise. Thou art in the view of the whole Court, where the iealous will suspect vpon euery light occasion, where, of the wise thou shalt be accounted fond, and of the foolish amorous.

Amatoru :

mark:

The Ladies themselves, howsoeuer they looke, wil thus imagine, that if thou take thought for loue, thou art but a foole; if take it lightly, no true seruant. Besides this, thou art to be bound, as it were an Appꝛentice, seruing 7. yeeres for that, which if thou winne, is lost in seven houres: if thou loue thine equall, it is no conquest: if thy superioꝛ, thou shalt be enuied: if thy inferioꝛ, laughed at: if one that is beautifull, her colour wil change, before thou get thy desire: if one that is wise, shee will ouer-reach thee so farre, that thou shalt neuer touch

Euphues and his England.

touch her : if vertuous, she will eschue such fond affection : if one de-
fozmed, she is not worthy of any affection : if she be rich, she needeth
thee not : if poore, thou needest not her : if old, why shouldest thou
loue her : if yong, why should she loue thee :

Thus Gentlemen, I fed my selfe with mine owne deuices, think-
ing by pcece meale to cut off that which I could not diminish, so
the more I strived with reason to conquer mine appetite, the more
against reason I was subdued of mine affections.

At the last calling to my remembrance an old rule of loue, which
a Courtier then told mee, of whom when I demanded what was
the first thing to winne my Lady, he answered, Oppoztunitie : as-
king what was the second, he said Oppoztunitie : desirous to know
what might be the third, he replied, Oppoztunitie. Which answers
I marking, as one that thought to take mine aime of so cunning
an Archer, coniectured, that to the beginning, continuing, and en-
ding of loue, nothing could be more conuenient then oppoztunitie,
to the getting of the which I applied my whole study, and wore
my wits to the stumps, assuring my selfe, that as there is a time
when the Hare will licke the hounds eare, and the fierce Tigresse
play with the gentle lambe : so there was a certaine season when wo-
men are to be won, in the which moment they haue neither will to
deny, nor wit to mistrust.

Such a time haue I read a yong Gentleman found, to obtaine
the loue of the Dutchesse of Millaine : such a time I haue heard that
a poore yeoman chose to get the fairest Ladie in Mantua. Unto the
which time I trusted so much, that I sold the skinne befoze the
beast was taken, reckoning without mine hoast, and setting downe
that in my booke as ready money, which afterwards I found to be
a desperate debt.

It chanced that this my Lady (whom although I might name for
the loue I bore her, yet I will not for the reuerence I owe her,
but in this story call her Iffida) for to recreate her minde, as also to
solace her body, went into the Country, where she determined to
make her abode for the space of thre moneths, hauing gotten leaue
of those that might best giue it. And in this iourney, I found good
fortune so fauourable, that her abiding was within two miles of

64041

Euphues and his England.

my fathers Mansion house, my parents being of great familiaritie with the Gentleman where my Ifida lay. Who now so fortunate as Fidus? Who so frolicke? Shee being in the Country, it was no abiding for me in Court, where euery pastime was a plague to the minde that liued in Melancholie. For as the Turtle hauing lost her mate, wandereth alone, ioying in nothing but in solitarinesse, so poore Fidus in the absence of Ifida, walked in his chamber, as one not desolate for lacke of companie, but desperate.

To make short of the circumstances which hold you so long from that you would heare, and I saine vtter: I came home to my Father, where at mine entrance, supper being set on the Table, I espied Ifida, Ifida Gentlemen, whom I found before I sought, and lust before I wonne. Yet lest the alteration of my face might argue some suspicion of my follies, I, as courtly as I could, though God knowes but courselly, at that time behaued my selfe as though nothing pained mee, when in truth nothing pleased mee. In the middle of Supper Ifida as well for the acquaintance wee had in Court, as also the courtesie she vsed in generall to all, taking a Glasse in her hand filled with wine, dranke to me in this wise: Gentleman, I am not learned, yet haue I heard that the Wine beareth three Grapes: the first altereth, the second troubleth, the third dulleth. Of what grape this wine is made, I cannot tell, and therefore I must craue pardon: if either this draught change you, vnlesse it be to the better; or grieue you, except it be greater gaine; or dull you, vnlesse it be your desire; which long preamble I vse to no other purpose then to warne you from Wine hereafter, beeing so well counselled before. And with that she drinke, deliuered me the glasse. I now taking heart at glasse to see her so gamesome, as merrily as I could, pledged her in this manner.

It is pitie Ladie you want a pulpit, hauing preached so well ouer the pot, wherein you both shew the learning wich you professe you haue not, and a kinde of loue, which I would you had: the one appeareth by your long sermon, the other by the desire you haue to keepe me sober, but I will referre my answer till after supper, and in the meane season to be so temperate, as you shall not thinke my wit to smell of wine, although in my opinion, such grapes set rather

Euphues and his England.

ther an edge vpon wit, then abate the point. If I may speake in your cast, quoth Iffida, (the glasse being at my nose) I thinke wine is such a whetstone for wit, that if it be often set in that manner, it will quickly grinde all the Steele out, and scarce leaue a backe where it found an edge. With many like speeches wee continued our supper, which I will not repeat, lest you should thinke vs Epicures to sit so long at our meat: but all being ended, we arose, where, as the manner is, thanks and courtesie being made to each other, we went to the fire, where I boldned now without blushing, tooke her by the hand, and thus began to kindle the flame which I should rather haue quenched: seeking to blow a cole, when I should haue blowen out the candle.

Gentlewoman, either you thought my wits very short that a Sip of Wine could alter me, or else yours very sharp, to cut me off so roundly, when as I (without offense be it spoken) haue heard, that as deepe drinketh the Gose as the Gander. Gentleman (quoth shee) in arguing of wits, you mistake mine, and call your owne in question. For what I say, proceeded rather of a desire to haue you in health, than of malice to wish you harme. For you well know, that wine to a young blood is in the spring time flax to fire, and at all times either vnholsonie or superfluous, and so dangerous, that more perish by a surfet than the sword.

I haue heard wise Clarkes saie, that Galen being asked what diet he vsed that he liued so long, answered, I haue drunk no wine, I haue touched no woman, I haue kept my selfe warme.

Now sir, if you will licence mee to proceed, this I thought, that if one of your yeares should take a dramme of Magis, whereby consequently you should fall into an ounce of loue, and then vpon so great heat take a little cold, it were enough to cast you away, or turne you out of the way. And although I be no Physitian, yet haue I bene vsed to attend sicke persons, where I found nothing to hurt them so much as Wine, which alwaies drelw with it, as the Adamant doth the yron, desire of women: how hurtfull both haue bin, though you be too young to haue tried it, yet you be old enough to beleue it. Wine should be taken, as the dogs of Egypt drinke water, by snatches, and so quench their thirst, and not hinder their

Euphues and his England.

their running, or as the daughters of Lyfander vsed it, who with a drop of wine took a spoonfull of water: or as the virgins in Rome, who drinke but their Ciesfull, contenting themselves as much with the sight, as the taste.

Thus to excuse my selfe of unkindnesse, you haue made me almost impudent, and I you (I feare me) impatient, in seeming to prescribe a diet, where is no danger: in giuing a preparatiue, when the body is purged. But seeing all this talke came of drinking, let it end with drinking.

I seeing my selfe thus ridden, thought either she should sit fast, or else I would cast her. And thus I replied: Ladie, you thinke to wade deepe, where the fword is but shallow, and to enter into the secrets of the minde, when it lieth open alreadie, wherein you vse no lesse art to bring mee in doubt of your good will, than craft to put mee out of doubt, hauing baited your hooke both with poison and pleasure, in the vsing the meanes of Physicke, (whereof you so talke) mingled sweet sirups with bitter drugges. You stand in feare that Wine should inflame my Liuer, and conuert mee to a loue, truely I am framed of that metall, that I can mortifie any affections, whether it be in drinke or desire, so that I haue no need of your plaisters, though I must needs giue thanks for your paines.

And now Philautus, for I see Euphues begin to nod, thou shalt vnderstand, that in the middelt of my reply, my Father with the rest of that companie interrupted me, saying, they would sal to some pastime, which because it groweth late Philautus, we will deferre till the morning, for age must keepe a straight diet, or else a sicklie life. Philautus tickled in euery veine with delight, was loth to leaue so, although not willing the good old man should breake his accustomed houre, vnto whom sleepe was the chiefest sustenance. And so waking Euphues, who had taken a nap, they all went to their lodging, where I thinke Philautus was musing vpon the euent of Fidus his loue. But there I will leaue them in their beds till the next morning.

Gentlemen & Gentlewomen, in the discourse of this loue, it may seeme I haue taken a new course: but such was the time then that it was as strange to loue, as it is now common, & then lesse vsed in the Court than it is now in the Country: but hauing respect to the

Euphues and his England.

the time past, I trust you will not condemne my present time, who am enforced to sing after their plainsong that was then vsed, and will follow hereafter the Crotchets that are in these daies cunningly handled. For the mindes of louers alter with the mad modes of the Musicians: and so much are they within few yeeres changed, that we account their old wooing and singing to haue so little cunning, that we esteeme it barbarous: and were they liuing to heare our new quoyings, they would iudge it to haue so much curiositie, that they would tearme it foolish.

In the time of Romulus, all heads were rounded of his fashion: in the time of Caesar curled of his manner. When Cyrus liued, euery one praised the hooked nose, and when he died they allowed the straight nose. And so it fareth with loue: in times past they vsed to wooe in plaine tearmes, now in picked sentences, and he speedeth best that speaketh wisest: euery one following the newest way, which is not euer the nearest way: some going ouer the stile when the gate is open, another keeping the right beaten path, when he may crosse ouer better by the fields.

Euery one followeth his owne fancy, which maketh diuers leap shot for want of good rising, and many shoot ouer for lacke of true aime.

And to that passe it is come, that they make an Art of that which was wont to be thought naturall: And thus it standeth, that it is not yet determined, whether in loue, Vlysses more preuailed with his wit, or Paris with his personage, or Achilles with his prowesse. For euery of them hath Venus by the hand, and they are all assured and certaine to win her heart.

But I had almost forgotten the old man, who vseth not to sleepe compasse, whom I see with Euphues and Philautus, now already in the garden, ready to proceed with his Tale: which if it seeme tedious, we will breake off againe when they goe to dinner.

Edus calling these Gentlemen vp, brought them into his garden, where, vnder a sweet arbour of Eglantine, the birds recording their sweet notes, he also strained his old pipe, and thus began.

Gentlemen, yesternight I left off abruptly, and therefore I must begin in this manner.

64041

Euphues and his England.

My Father placed vs all in good order, requesting either by questions to whet our wits, or by stories to trie our memories, and Iffida, that might best there be bould, being the best in the companie, and at all assaies to good for me, began againe to preach in this manner. Thou art a courtier, Fidus, therefore best able to resolute any question: for I know thy wit good to vnderstand, and ready to answer, to thee therefore I addresse my talke.

There was sometime in Sienna a Magnifico, whom God blessed with three daughters, but by three wiues, and of three sundrie qualities: the eldest was very faire, but a verie sole: the second marueilous wittie, but marueilous wanton: the third as vertuous as any living, but more deformed then any that euer liued.

The noble Gentleman their father disputed for the bestowing of them thus.

I thinke the Gods haue giuen me three daughters, who in their bosomes carrie their dowries, insomuch as I shall not need to disburse one mite for all their mariages: Maidens, be they neuer so foolish, yet being faire they are commonly fortunate: for that men in these daies haue more respect to the outward shew, then the inward substance: wherein they imitate good Lapidaries, who chuse the stones that delight the eie, measuring the value, not by the hidden vertue, but by the outward glittering: or wise painters, who laie their best colours vpon their worst counterfaite.

And in this, mee thinketh nature hath dealete indifferentlie, that a sole whom euery one abhorreth, should haue beautie, which euery one desireth; that the excellencie of the one, might excuse the vanitie of the other: for as wee in nothing more differ from the Gods, then when we are soles: so in nothing doe we come nere them so much, as when wee are amiable. This caused Helen to bee snatched vp for a Starre, and Ariadne to bee placed in the Heauens, not that they were wise, but faire, fitter to adde a Maiestie in the Skie, then beare a Maiestie in earth. Juno, for all her iealousie, beheld Io, wished to bee no Goddesse so shee might bee so gallant. Loue commeth in at the eye, not at the eare, by seeing Natures workes, not by hearing womens wordes. And such affectes and pleasure doth sight bring vnto vs, that

Euphues and his England:

that diuers haue lined by looking on faire and beatifull pictures, desiring no meate, nor harkning to any Musicke. What made the Gods so often to frewant from heauen, and miche here on earth, but beautie? What made men to imagine that the firmamēt was God, but beautie? which is said to bewitch the wise, and enchant them that made it. Pigmalion, for beautie, loued the image of Quozie, Appelles, the counterfait of Campaspe: and none we haue heard of so scarselesse, that the name of beautie cannot either bzeake or bend.

It is this onely that Princes desire in their houses, Gardens, Orcharde, or beds: following Alexander, who more esteemed the face of Venus, not yet finished, then the Table of the nine Muses perfected. And I am of that munde, that there can be nothing giuen vnto mortall men by the immortall gods, either more noble or more necessarie then beautie. For as when the counterfait of Ganimedes was shewen at a market, euery one would faine buy it, because Zeuxes had therein shewed his greatest cunning: so when a beautifull woman appeareth in a multitude, euery man is drawen to sue to her, for that the Gods (the onely painters of beautie) haue in her expressed the art of their deitie. But I will heere rest my selfe, knowing that if I should runne so farre as beautie would carry mee, I should sooner want breath to tell her praises, then matter to proue them. Thus I am perswaded, that my faire daughter shall be well married, for there is none that can or will demand a greater ioynter then beautie.

My second childe is wittie, but yet wanton, which in my minde rather addeth a delight to the man, then a disgrace to the maide. and so linked are those two qualities together, that to the wanton without wit, is apishnesse; and to be thought wittie without wantonnesse, precisenesse. When Lais beeing very pleasant had told a merriest; it is pitie saide Aristippus, that Lais, hauing so good a wit, should bee a wanton. Beaquoth Lais, but it were more pitie that Lais should bee a wanton, and haue no good wit. Othris King of the AEgyptians, beeing much delighted with pleasant conceits, would often affirme, that hee had rather haue a virgin that could giue a quicke answer that might cut him, then a milde speech that might claw. When it was objected to a Gentlewoman, that shee was neither faire nor

17049

Euphues and his England.

fortunate, and yet (quoth she) wise and well fauoured, thinking
t the chiefest gift that nature could bestow, to haue a furbrowne
hue, and an excellent head. It is wit that allureth, when euerie
word shall haue his weight, when nothing shall proceed, but it
shall either fauour of a sharp conceit, or a secret conclusion. And
this is the greatest thing, to conceiue readily, and answer aptlie,
to vnderstand whatsoeuer is spoken, and to reply as though they
vnderstood nothing. A Gentleman that once loued a Lady most en-
tirely, walking with her in a Parke, with a deepe sigh began to say,
O that women could be constāt. She replied: O that they could not
pulling her hat ouer her head. Why, quoth the Gentleman, doth the
sunne offend your eies: yea, answered she, the sonne of your mother.
Which quicke and readie replies being wel marked of him, hee was
enforced to sue for that which hee was determined to shake off.
A noble man in Sienna, disposed to iest with a Gentlewoman of
meane birth, yet excellent qualities, betwē game and earnest gan
thus to salute her.

I know not how I should commend your beautie, because it is
somewhat browne, nor your stature being somewhat too low, and
of your wit I cannot iudge. Po (quoth she) I beleue you, for none
can iudge of wit but they that haue it: why then (quoth hee) do-
est thou think me a foole? thought is free my Lord (quoth she) I will
not take you at your word. He perceiuing all outward faults to
be recompenced with inward fauour, chose this virgin for his wife.
And in my simple opinion, he did a thing both worthy his stocke, &
her vertue. It is it that flourisheth when beauty fadeth: that war-
eth young when age approacheth, and resembleth the Iuie leafe,
who although it be dead, continueth greene. And because, of al crea-
tures, the womans wit is most excellent, therefore haue the Poets
fained the Muses to bee women: the Pymphes the Goddes: en-
samples of whose rare wisdomes and sharpe capacities, would no-
thing but make mee commit Idolatry with my daughter. I neuer
heard but of three things that argued a fine wit, inuention, concei-
uing, answering. Which haue also bene found so common in wo-
men, that, were it not I should flatter them, I should thinke them
singular.

Then this sufficeth mee, that my second daughter shall not
lead

Euphues and his England.

lead Apes in hell, though she haue not a penny for the Priest, because she is witty, which bindeth weake things, and looseth strong things, and worketh all things in those that haue either wit themselves, or loue wit in others.

My yongest, though no pearle to hang at ones eare, yet so precious shee is to a well disposed minde, that grace seemeth almost to disdaine nature. She is deformed in body, slow of speech, crabbed in countenance, and almost in all parts crooked, but in behaviour so honest, in prayer so deuout, so precise in all her dealings, that I neuer heard her speake any thing, that either concerned not good instruction, or godly mirth.

Who neuer delighteth in costly apparel, but euer desireth homely attire, accounting no bzaury greater than vertue: who beholding her ugly face in a glasse, smiling said: This face were faire if it were turned; noting that the inward motions would make the outward fauour but counterfeit. For as the precious Stone Sardaia hath nothing in outward appearance, but that which seemeth black; but being broken, poureth forth beames like the Sunne: so vertue sheweth but bare to the outward eie; but being pierced with inward desire, shineth like Christall. And this I dare auouch, that as the Troglodites which digged in the filthy ground for roots, and found the inestimable Stone Topason, which enriched them euer after: so hee that seeketh after my yongest daughter which is deformed, shall finde the great treasure of piety to comfort him during his life. Beautifull women are but like the Ermine, whose skinne is desired, whose carcase is despised: the vertuous contrariwise are then most liked when their skin is least loued.

Then ought I to take least care for her, whom every one that is honest will care for: so that I will quiet my selfe with this persuasion, that every one shall haue a lover shortly. Beauty cannot liue without a husband, wit will not, vertue shall not.

Now Gentleman, I haue propounded my reasons, for every one, I must now aske you the question. If it were your chance to trauaile to Sienna, and to see as much there as I haue told you heere, whether would you choose for your wife; the faire soile, the witty wanton, or the crooked Saint?

When she had finished, I stood in a maze, seeing thre hooks laid

Euphues and his England.

in one bait, vncertaine to answer what might please her, yet compelled to say somewhat, lest I should discredit my selfe: But seeing all were whist to heare my iudgement, I replied thus.

I Adie Iffida, and Gentlewomen all, I meane not to trauell to Sienna to wooe Beautie, lest in comming home, the aire change it, and then my labour be lost: neither to seeke so far for wit, lest shee account me a foole, when I might speed as well nerer hand: nor to sue for vertue, lest in Italy I be infected with vice: and so looking to get Iupiter by the hand, I catch Pluto by the heele.

But if you will imagine that great Magnifico to haue sent his three daughters into England, I would thus debate with them before I would bargain with them. I loue beautie well, but I could not finde in my heart to marry a foole: for if she be unpudent, I shall not rule her: and if she be obstinate, she will rule me: and my selfe none of the wisest, me thinketh it were no good match, for two fooles in one bed are too many.

Wit, of all things setteth my fancy on edge, but I should hardly choose a wanton: for be she neuer so wise, if alwaies she want one when she hath mee, I had as leaue shee would want me too, for all my apparell I would haue my cap sit close.

Vertue I cannot mislike, which hitherto I haue honored, but such a crooked Apostle I neuer brooked: for vertue may well fatte my minde, but it will neuer feede mine eie: and in marriage, as market folkes tell me, the husband should haue two eies, and the wife but one; but in such a match it is as good to haue no eie as no appetite.

But to answer of three inconueniences: which I would choose (although each threaten a mischance) I must needs take the wise wanton: who if by her wantonnesse she will neuer want where she likes, yet by her wit she will euer conceale whom she loues, and to weare a horne and not know it, will doe me no more harme then to eate a flie and not see it.

Iffida, I know not whether stoong with mine answer, or not content with my opinion, replied in this manner. When Eridus when you match, God send you such a one as you like best, but be sure alwaies that your head bee not higher then your hat. And thus faining an excuse, departed to her lodging, which caused all the company to breake off their determined pastimes, leauing mee perpler,

Euphues and his England.

perplexed with an hundred contrary imaginations.

For this, Philautus, thought I, that either I did not hit the question which shee would, or that I hit it too full against her will: for to say the truth, wittie shee was, and somewhat merrie, but God knoweth so far from wantonnesse, as my selfe was from wise-
dome, and I as farre from thinking ill of her, as I found her from taking me well.

Thus all night tossed in my bed, I determined the next day if any opportunitie were offered, to offer also my importunate service. And found the time fit, though her minde so froward, that to think of it, my heart throbbed, and to utter it, will bleede freshly.

The next day I comming to the gallerie where shee was solita-
rily walking, with her frowning cloath, as sicke lately on the sul-
lens, vnderstanding my father to be gone on hunting, and all other
the Gentlewomen either walked abroad to take the aire, or not yet
ready to come out of their chambers, I aduentured in one ship to
put all my wealth, and at this time to open my long concealed loue,
determined either to be a Knight, as we saie, or a knitter of Caps.
And in this manner I vttered my first speech.

Lady, to make a long preambule to a short sute, would seeme su-
perfluous, and to begin abruptlie in a matter of great weight,
might be thought absurd: so as I am brought into a doubt, whe-
ther I should offend you with too many words, or hinder my selfe
with too few.

She not staying for a longer treatise, brake me off thus roundlie.

Gentleman, a short sute is sone made, but great matters not ea-
sily granted: if your request be reasonable, a word will serue: if
not, a thousand will not suffice. Therefore if there be any thing that
I may doe you pleasure in, see it be honest, and vse not tedious dis-
courses or colours of Rhetorike, which though they bee thought
courtly, yet are they not esteemed necessarie: for the purest Eme-
rald shineth brightest when it hath no oyle, and truth delighteth
when it is apparelled worst. Then I thus replied.

Faire Lady, as I know you wise, so haue I found you courteous:
which two qualities, meeting in one of so rare beauty, must fore-
shew some great maruell, and worke such effect in those that either
haue

Euphues and his England.

haue heard of your praise, or seene your person, that they are informed to offer themselves vnto your seruice. Among the number of which your vassals, I, though least worthe, yet most willing, am now come to proffer both my life to do you good, and my liuings to be at your command: which franke offer proceeding of a faithfull minde, can neither be refused of you, nor misliked. And because I would cut off speeches which might seeme to saour either of flatterie or deceit, I conclude thus, that as you are the first, vnto whom I haue vowed my loue, so you shal be the last, requiring nothing but a friendly acceptance of my seruice, and good will for the reward of it.

Iffida, whose right care began to glow, and both whose cheekes waxed redde, either with choler or bashfulnesse, toke me vp thus for stumbling.

Gentleman, you make mee blush as much for anger as shame, that seeking to praise me, and proffer your selfe, you both bring my good name in question, and your ill-meaning into disdaine: so that thinking to present mee with your heart, you haue thrust into my hands the serpent Amphisbena, which hauing at each end a sting, hurteth both waies. You terme me faire, and therein you flatter: wise, and therein you meane wittie: courteous, which in other plaine words if you durst haue vttered it, you would haue named wanton.

Haue you thought mee, Fidus, so light, that none but I could fit your loosenesse? Or am I the wittie wanton which you harped vpon yesterdaye, that would alwaies giue you the sting in the hand? You are much deceiued in me, Fidus, and I as much in you: for you shall neuer finde me for your appetite, and I had thought neuer to haue tasted you so vnpleasant to mine. If I be amiable, I will doe those things that are fit for so good a face: if deformed, those things that should make me faire. And howsoever I liue, I pardon your presumption, knowing it to be no lesse common in Court, then foolish, to tel a faire tale to a soule Ladie, wherein they sharpen, I confesse, their wits, but shew as I thinke smal wisdome: and you among the rest, because you would be accounted courtlie, haue assailed to feele the veine you cannot see, wherein you follow not the best Physicians, yet the most, who feeling the pulses, do alwaies say it betokeneth an Ague,

Euphues and his England.

Ague, and you seeing my pulses beate, pleasantly iudge me apt to fall into a soles feauer: which lest it happen to shake me hereafter, I am minded to shake you off now, vntill but one request, where I should seeke oft to reuege, that is, that you neuer attempt by word or writing to sollicite your suite, which is no more pleasant to me, than the wrynging of a straight shoue.

When she had vttered these bitter words, she was going into her chamber: but I, that now had no stay of my selfe, began to stay her, and thus againe to reply.

I Perceine Iffida, that where the streame runneth smoothest, the water is deepest: and where the least smoake is, there to bee the greatest fire: and where the mildest countenance is, there to bee the melancholiest conceits. I sweare to thee by the Gods: and there she interrupted me againe in this manner.

I dus, the more you sweare, the lesse I beleue you: for that it is a practise in loue, to haue as little care of their owne oathes, as they haue of others honours, imitating Iupiter, who neuer kept oath he swoze to Iuno, thinking it lawfull in loue to haue as small regard of religion, as he had of chastity. And because I will not feed you with delaies, nor that you should comfort your selfe with triall, take this for a flat answer, that as yet I meane not to loue any, and if I doe, it is not you: and so I leaue you. But once againe I staied her steppes being now thoroughlie heated, as well with loue as with choler, and thus I thundered.

I f I had vsed the policie that hunters doe in catching of Hiena, it might be also I had now won you: but comming of the right side, I am entangled my selfe, and had it bene on the left side, I should haue inueagled thee. Is this the guerdon for good wil: is this the curtesie of Ladies, the life of Courtiers, the sode of louers? Ah Iffida, little doest thou know the force of affection, and therefore thou rewardest it lightly, neither shewing curtesie like a louer, or giuing thanks like a Lady. If I should compare my blood with thy birth, I am as noble: if my wealth with thine, as rich: if confer qualities, not much inferiour: but in goodwill as far aboue thee, as thou art beyond mee in pride.

Doest thou disdain mee because thou art beautifull? Why, colours fade when courtesie flourisheth. Doest thou reiect me for that thou

17041

Euphues and his England.

thou art wise? Why, wit hauing told many cards, lacked manie an ace of wisdome. But this is incident to women, to loue those that least care for them, and to hate those that most desire them, making a sticke of that which they should vse for a stomacher.

And seeing it is so, better lost they are with litle grudge, than found with much grieve: better sold for sorrow, than bought for repentance: and better to make no account of loue, than an occupation, Where al ones seruice, be it neuer so great, is neuer thought enough, when, were it neuer so little, it is too much. When I had thus raged, shee thus replied.

FIdus, you goe the wrong way to the wood, in making a gap when the gate is open, or in seeking to enter by force, when your next way lieth by fauour. Wherein you follow the humoꝝ of Ajax, who losing Achilles shield by treason, thought to winne it again by rage: but it fell out with him, as it doth commonly with all those that are cholerick, that he hurt no man but himselfe, neither haue you moued any to offence but your selfe. And in my minde, though simple be the comparison, yet seemly it is, that your anger is like the wangling of children, who when they cannot get what they would haue by plate, they fall a crying: and not vnlike the vse of foule gamesters, who hauing lost the maine by true iudgement, thinke to face it out with a false oath, and you missing of my loue, which you required in sport, determine to get it by spight. If you haue a commission to take by Ladies, let mee see it: if a priuilege, let mee know it: if a custome, I meane to breake it.

You talke of your birth, when I know there is no difference of bloods in a bason, & as litle do I esteem those that boast of their ancestors, and haue themselues no vertue, as I doe of those that crack of their loue, and haue no modesty. I know nature hath prouided, and I thinke our lawes allow it, that one may loue when they see their time, not that they must loue when others appoint it.

Whereas you bring in a rabble of reasons, as it were to binde mee against my will, I answer, that in all respects I thinke you so farre to excell mee, that I cannot finde in my heart to match with you. For one of so great good will as you are, to encounter with one of such pride as I am, were neither commendable nor conuenient,

Euphues and his England.

uenient, no more then a patch of fustian in a Damaskie coat.

As for my beautie and wit, I had rather make them better then they are, being now but meane, by vertue, then worse then they are, which would then be nothing, by loue.

Now whereas you bring in (I know not by what proofe, for I thinke you were neuer so much of womens counsellis) that there women best like, where they be least beloved, then ought they more to pitie vs, not to oppresse vs, seeing wee haue neither free will to chouse, nor fortune to enioy. Then Fidas, since your eies are so sharp that you cannot onely looke through a millstone, but cleane through the minde, and so cunning that you can leuell at the dispositions of women whom you neuer knew, mee thinketh you should vse the meane, if you desire to haue the end, which is to hate those whom you would faine haue to loue you, for this haue you set for a rule (yet out of square) that women then loue most, when they bee loathed most. And to the end I might stoop to your lure, I pray you begin to hate me, that I may loue you.

Touching your losing and finding, your buying and selling, it much skilleth not, for I had rather you should lose me, so you might neuer finde me againe, then finde me, that I should thinke my selfe lost: and rather had I bee sold of you for a penie, then bought for you with a pound. If you meane either to make an art or an occupation of loue, I doubt not but you shal finde worke in the Court sufficient: but you shall not know the length of my foot, vntill by your cunning you get commendation.

A phrase now there is which belongeth to your Shop-board, that is, to make loue, and when I shall heare of what fashion it is made, if I like the patterne, you shall cut me a partlet, so as you cut it not with a paire of left handed sheeres. And I doubt not though you haue marred you first loue in the making, yet by the time you haue made three or foure loues, you will proue an expert workeman: for as yet you are like the Tailors boy, who thinketh to take measure befoze he can handle the sheeres.

And thus I protest vnto you, because you are but a yong beginner, that I will helpe you to as much custome as I can, so as you will promise me to sew no false stiches, & when mine old loue is woynethred bare, you shall take measure of a new.

17041

Euphues and his England.

In the meane season doe not discourage your selfe, Apelles was no good painter the first day: For in euery occupation one must first indeuour to begin. He that will sell Lawne, must learne to fold it, and he that will make loue, must first learne to court it.

As shee was in this veine very pleasant, so I thinke shee would haue bene very long, had not the Gentlewomen called her to walk, being so faire a day: then taking her leaue very courteously, shee left him alone, yet turning againe shee said: Will you not man vs, Fidus, being so proper a man? Yes quoth I, and without asking too, had you bene a proper woman. When smiling shee said, you should finde me a proper woman, had you bene a proper workeman. And so she departed.

Now, Philautus and Euphues, what a traunce was I left in, who bewayling my loue, was answered with hate: or, if not with hate, with such a kind of heate, as almost burnt the very bowels wit hin mee. What greater discourtesie could there possibly rest in the mind of a Gentlewoman, then with so many nippes, such bitter girdes, such disdainefull glækes, to answer him that honored her? What crueltie more unfit for so comely a Ladie, then to spur him that galloped, or to let him bleed in the heart, whose vaine she should haue stanchèd in the liuer? But it fared with me as with the hearb Basil, the which the more it is crushed, the sooner it springeth: or the Rew, which the oftner it is cut, the better it groweth, or the Poppie, which the more it is trodden with the foote, the more it flourisheth. For in these extremities, beaten as it were to the ground with disdain, my loue reacheth to the top of the house with hope, not vnlike vnto a tree which though it be often felled to the hard roote, yet it buddeth againe and getteth a top.

But to make an end both of my tale and my sorowes, I wil proceed, onely crauing a little patience if I fall in to mine old passions. With that Philautus came in with his spoke, saying: In faith Fidus me thinketh I could neuer be wearie in hearing this discourse, and I feare me the end will be too soone, although I seele in my selfe the impression of thy sorowes.

Yea, quoth Euphues, you shall finde my friend Philautus so kind hearted, that before you haue done, hee will bee further in loue with her then you were: for as your Ladie said, Philautus will be

Euphues and his England.

he bound to make lone, as warden of that Occupation. Then Fidus: Well, God grant Philautus better successe then I had, which was too bad. For my Father being returned from hunting, and the Gentlewomen from walking, the table was couered, and wee all sate downe to dinner, none moze pleasant then Iffida, which would not conclude her mirth: and I not melancholie, because I would couer my sadnesse, lest either she might thinke me to doate, or my father suspect me to desire her. And thus wee both in table talke began to rest. She requesting mee to be her caruer, and I not attending well to that shee craved, gaue her Salt, which when shee receiued, she gan thus to reply.

In sooth Gentleman, I seldome eate Salt for feare of anger, and if you giue me in token that I want wit, then will you make mee cholericke before I eate it: for women, bee they neuer so foolish, would euer be thought wise.

I staied not long for mine answer, but as well quickned by her former talke, as desirous to cry quittance for her present tongue, said thus. If to eat store of Salt cause one to fret: and to haue no Salt signifie lacke of wit, then doe you cause mee to meruell, that eating no Salt you are so captious, and louing no salt you are so wise, when indeed so much wit is sufficient for a woman, as when she is in the raine, can warne her to come out of it.

You mistake your aime (quoth Iffida) for such a shower may fall, as did once into Dancas lap, and then that woman were a foole that would come out of it: but it may bee your mouth is out of taste, therefore you were best season it with salt. Indeed (quoth I) your answers are so fresh, that without Salt I can hardly swallow them. Many nips were returned that time betweene vs, and some so bitter, that I thought then to proceed rather of malice to worke despight, then of mirth to shew dispozt. My father very desirous to heare questions asked, willed mee after dinner to vse some demaund, which after grace I did in this sort.

Ladie Iffida, it is not vnlikelie but that you can answer a question as wisely, as the last night you asked one wilely, and I trust you will bee as readie to resolue any doubt by intreatie as, I was by commandement. There was a Lady in Spaine, who after the decease of her Father, had three sutozs (and yet neuer a good

17041

Euphues and his England.

Archer) the one excelled in all gifts of the body, insomuch that there could be nothing added to his perfection, and so armed in all points, as his very lookes were able to pearce the heart of any Ladie, especially of such a one, as seemed her selfe to haue no lesse beautie then she had personage. For, that as betwene the similitude of manners, there is a friendship in euery respect absolute: so in the composition of the body, there is a certaine lone ingendered by ones looks, where both the bodies resemble each other, as women both in one home.

The other, had nothing to commend him but a quick wit, which he had alwaies so at his will, that nothing could be spoken, but hee would wrest it to his owne purpose, which wrought such delight to his Lady, who was no lesse wittie then he, that you would haue thought a marriage to bee solemnized, before the match could bee talked of. For there is nothing in loue more requisite or more desirable, then pleasant and wise conference, neither can there arise any storme in loue, which by wit is not turned to a calme.

The third, was a Gentleman of great possessions, large reuenues, full of money, but neither the wisest that euer enioyed so much, nor the properest that euer desired so much: he had no plea in his sute but gilt, which, rubbed well in a hot hand, is such a grease as wil supple a very hard heart. And who is so ignorant, that knoweth not gold to be a key for euery lock, chiefly with his Lady, who her selfe was well stored, and as yet infected with a desire of more, that she could not but lend a good countenance in this match.

Now Lady Iffida, you are to determine this Spanish bargaine, or if you please wee will make it an English controuersie, supposing you to bee the Lady, and three such Gentlemen to come vnto you a wooing: in faith, who should be the speeder?

Gentleman (quoth Iffida) you may answer your owne question by your owne argument if you would, for if you conclude the Lady to be beautifull, wittie, and wealthie, then no doubt she will take such a one as should haue comeliness of body, sharpenes of wit and store of riches: Otherwise I would condemne that wit in her, which you seeme so much to commend: her selfe excelling in three qualities, she should take one which was indued but w one: in perfect loue the eye must be pleased, the eare delighted, the heart comforted;

Euphues and his England.

sorted: beauty causeth the one, wit the other, wealth the third.

To loue onely for comelinesse, were lust: to like for wit onely, madness: to desire chiefly for goods, couetousnes: and yet can there be no loue without beautie, but we loath it: no without wit, but we scorn it: no without riches but we repent it. Euery flower hath his blossom, his saour, his sap: and euery desire should haue to feed the eie, to please the wit, to maintain the root.

Ganimedes may cast an amiable countenance, but that feedeth not: Vlysses tell a witty tale, but that fatteth not: Ciceus bring bags of gold, and that doth both: yet without the aid of beauty wee cannot bestow it, and without wit he knowes not how to vse it. So that I am of this mind, there is no Lady but in her choice wil be so resolute, that either she will liue a virgin, till she haue such a one as shal haue all these three properties, or else die for anger, if she match with one that wanteth any of them.

I perceiuing her to stand so stiffly, thought, if I might, to remoue her footing: and replied againe.

Lady, you now thinke by policy to start, where you bound me to answer by necessity, not suffering mee to ioine three flowers in one Rosegay, but to chouse one, or else to leaue all. The like I must craue at your hands, that if of force you must consent to any one, whether would you haue the proper man, the wise, or the rich?

She, as not without an answer, quickly requited me.

Although there be no force, which may compell me to take any, neither a proffer whereby I may choose all, yet to answer you flatly, I would haue the wealthiest, for beauty without riches goeth a begging, and wit without wealth, cheapneth al things in the faire, but buyeth nothing. Truly Ladie (quoth I) either you speake not as you thinke, or you be farre ouer-shot, for me thinketh that he that hath beauty, shall haue monie of Ladies for almes, and hee that is witty will get it by craft: but the rich hauing inough, and nether loued for shape nor sense, must either keepe his gold for those hee knowes not, or spend it on them that care not. Well answered Iffida, so many men so many minds: now haue you my opinion, you must not thinke to wzing me from it, for I had rather bee as all women are, obstinate in mine owne conceit, then apt to bee brought to others constructions.

Euphues and his England.

My father liked her choice, whether it were to flatter her, or for feare to offend her, or that he loued inony himselfe, better than either for wit or beauty. And our conclusions thus ended, she accompanied with her Gentlewomen, and other her seruants, went to her vncles, hauing tarried a day longer with my father then shee appointed, though not so many with me, as she was welcome.

Ah Philautus, what torments didst thou think poore Fidas endured, who now felt the flame euen to take full hold of his heart: and thinking by solitarinesse, to driue away melancholy, and by imaginati- on to forget loue, I laboured no otherwise, then hee, that to haue his horse stand still, pricketh him with the spur, or hee that hauing sore eies rubbeth them with salt water. At the last with continual absti- nence from meat, from company, from sleepe, my body began to consume, & my head to wax idle, insomuch that the substance which perforce was thrust into my mouth, was neuer digested, nor the talke which came from my addle bzaines, liked: for euer in my slum- ber, me-thought Irida presented her selfe, now with a countenance pleasant and merrie, straight waies with a colour full of wrath and mischief.

My father, no lesse sorrowfull for my disease, than ignorant of the cause, sent for diuers Physicians, among the which there came an Italian, who feeling my pulses, casting my water, & marking my lookes, commanded the chamber to bee voided: and shutting the doore applied this medicine to my maledie. Gentleman, there is none that can better heale your wound then hee that made it, so that you should haue sent for Cupid, not Esculapius, for although they bee both Gods, yet will they not meddle in each others office. Apelles will not go about to amend Lyfippus caruing, yet they both wrought Alexander: nor Hypocrates busie himselfe with Ouids Art, and yet they both described Venus. Your humour is to bee purged, not by Apothecaries confections, but by the following of good coun- sell.

You are in loue, Fidas: which if you couer in a close chest, will burne euery place, before it burst the locke. For as we know by Physick, that popson will disperse it selfe in euery veine before it pearce the heart: so I haue heard by those that in loue could saie somewhat, that it maineth euery part before it kill the liuer. If there

Euphues and his England.

therefore you wil make me priuie to all your deuises, I wil procure such meanes, as you shall reconer in short space: otherwise, if you seeke to conceale the partie and increase your passions, you shall shorten your life, and so lose your loue, for whose sake you liue.

When I heard my Physitian so pat to hit my disease, I could not dissemble with him lest he should beuzaie it, neither would I, in hope of remedie.

Unto him I discoursed the faithfull loue which I boze to Iffida, and described in euery particular, as to you I haue done. Which he hearing, procured within one daie Ladie Iffida to see me, telling my ffather that my disease was but a consuming feauer, which he hoped in short time to cure.

When my Ladie came, and saw me so altered in a moneth, wasted to the hard bones, more like a ghost then a liuing creature, after many words of comfort (as women want none about sicke persons) when shes saw opportunitie, she asked me whether the Italian were my messenger, or if he were, whether his embassage were true: which question I thus answered.

Ladie, to dissemble with the world when I am departing from it, would profit me nothing with man, & hinder me much with God: to make my death-bed the place of deceit, might hasten my death and increase my danger.

I haue loued you long, and now at length I must leaue you, whose hard heart I will not impute to discourtesie, but destinie: it contenteth me that I died in faith, though I could not liue in fauour: neither was I euer more desirous to begin my loue, then I am now to end my life. Things which cannot be altered, are to bee bozne, not blamed: follies past, are sooner remembred then redressed: and time past may well be repeated, but neuer recalled. I will not recount the passions I haue suffered, I thinke the effects shew them, and now it is more behouuefull for me to fall to praying for a new life, then to remember the old: yet this I adde (which though it merit no mercie to saue, it deserueth thankses of a friend) that onely I loued thee, and liued for thee, and now die for thee. And so turning on my left side, I fetched a deepe sigh.

Iffida, the water standing in her eies, clasping my hands in hers, with a sad countenance answered me thus.

17049

Euphues and his England.

My god Fidus, if the increasing of my sorowes might mitigate the extremity of thy sicknesse, I could be content to resolve my selfe into teares, to rid thee of trouble: but the making of a fresh wound in my body, is nothing to the healing of a festered ioye in thy bowels: for that such diseases are to bee cured in the end by the meanes of their original. For as by Basil the scorpion is ingendered, & by the meanes of the same hearb destroyed: so loue, which by time & fancy is bred in an idle braine, is by time and fancy banished from the hart: or as the Salamander, which being a long space nourished in the fire, at y last quencheth it: so affection hauing taken hold of the fancy, and liuing as it were in the minde of the louer, in tract of time altereth & changeth the heat, and turneth it to chilnes.

It is no small grieve to me, Fidus, that I should be thought to bee the cause of thy languishing, and cannot be remedy of thy disease. For vnto thee I will reueale more then either wisdom would allow, or my modesty permit.

And yet so much as may acquite me of ingratitude towards thee, and rid thee of the suspicion conceiued of me.

Nota:

So it is Fidus and my god friend, that about two yeares past, there was in Court a Gentleman, not vnknowne to thee, nor, I thinke vnbeloued of thee, whose name I will not conceale, lest thou shouldest either thinke me to forge, or him not worthy to bee named.

This gentleman was called Thirus, in all respects so well qualified, as had he not been in loue with me, I should haue been enamoured of him. But his hastinesse preuented my heat, who began to sue for that which I was ready to offer: whose sweet tale although I wished it to bee true, yet at the first I could not beleue. For that men in matters of loue, haue as many waies to deceiue, as they haue words to vter.

I seemed strait laced, as one neither accustomed to such suites, nor willing to entertaine such a seruant, yet so warily as putting him from me with my little finger, I drew him to mee with my whole hand. For I stood in a great mummuring how I might behaue my selfe, least being too coy, he might think me proud, or being too much curtesie hee might thinke mee wanton. Thus long time I held him in a doubt, thinking thereby to haue iust triall of his faith,

Euphues and his England.

faith, or plaine knowledge of his fallshood. In this manner I led my life almost one yeere, untill with often meeting and diuers conferences, I felt my selfe so wounded, that though I tholight no heauen to my hap, yet I liued as it were in hell till I had enioyed my hope. For as the tree Ebenus though it no way be set in a flaine, yet it burneth with sweet saouours: so my minde, though it could not be fired, so that I thought my selfe wise, yet was it almost consumed to ashes with pleasant delight and sweet cogitations, insomuch that it faced with me as it doth with the trees stricken with thunder, which hauing the barkes sound, are byuised in the bodie: so finding my outward parts without blemish, looking into my minde could not see it without blowes.

I now perceiuing it high time to vse the Physitian, who was allwaies at hand, determined at the next meeting to conclude such a faithfull & inuiolable league of loue, as neither the length of time, nor the distance of place, nor the threatening of friends, nor the spight of fortune, nor the feare of death, should either alter or diminish: which accordingly was then finished, and hath hitherto bene cruelly fulfilled, Thirlus as thou knowest, hath euer since beene beyond the seas, the remembrance of whose constancie, is the onely comfort of my life: neither doe I reioyce in any thing more then in the faith of my good Thirlus.

Then Fidus I appeale in this case to thy honestie, which shall determine of mine owne honour. Wouldest thou haue me inconstant to mine old friend, and faithfull to a new? Knowest thou not that as the Almond tree beareth most fruit when it is old, so loue hath greatest faith when it groweth in age? It falleth out in loue as it doth in Wines, for the young Wines bring the most wine, but the old the best: so tender loue maketh greatest shew of blossomes, but tried loue bringeth forth sweetest iuice.

And yet I wil say thus much, not to adde courage to thy attempts that I haue taken as great a delight in thy company as euer I did in any (my Thirlus onely excepted) which was the cause that oftentimes I would either by questions moue thee to talke, or by quarels incense thee to choler, perceiuing in thee a wit answerable to my desire, which I thought thorowly to whet by some discourse. But wert thou in comelinesse Alexander, and my Thirlus

17049

Euphues and his England.

Therſites, wert thou Vlyſſes, hee Midas, thou Crceſus, hee Codrus, I would not forſake him to haue thee, no, not if I might thereby prolong thy life, or ſaue mine owne: ſo faſt a root hath true loue taken in mine heart, that the more it is digged, the deeper it groweth: the oftner it is cut, the leſſe it blædeth: and the more it is loden, the better it beareth.

What is there in this vile earth, that more commendeth a woman then conſtancie? It is neither his wit, though it be excellent, that I eſteeme: neither his birth, though it be noble: nor his bringing vp, which hath alwaies bene courtly: but onely his conſtancy and my faith, which no torments, no tyrant, no death ſhall diſſolue. For neuer ſhall it be ſaid, that Iſſida, was falſe to Thirſus, though Thirſus be faithleſſe (which the Gods forſend) to Iſſida.

For as Amulus the cunning painter, ſo portrayed Minerua, that which way ſoeuer one caſt his eies, thee alwaies beheld him: ſo hath Cupid ſo erquiſitely drawn the image of Thirſus in my heart, that what way ſoeuer I glance, mee thinketh hee looketh ſtedfaſtly vpon me: inſomuch that when I haue ſeene any to gaze on my beauty (ſimple God wot though it be) I haue wiſhed to haue the eie of Auguſtus Ceſar, to dim their ſights, with the ſharp and ſcorching beames. Such force hath time and triall wrought, that if Thirſus ſhould die, I would be buried with him: imitating the Eagle, which Seſta a virgin brought vp, who ſeeing the bones of the virgin caſt into the fire, threw himſelfe in with them, & burnt himſelfe with them. And Hippocrates Twins, who were bozne together, laughed together, wept together, and died together.

For as Alexander would be ingraued of no one man in a pretious ſtone, but onely of Pergoteles: ſo would I haue my picture impzinted in no heart, but in his, by Thirſus.

Conſider with thy ſelfe Fidus, that a faire woman without conſtancie, is not vnlike a græne tree without fruit, reſembling the counterfait that Praxitiles made for Flora, beſore the which, if one ſtood directly, it ſeemed to weepe; if on the left ſide, to laugh; if on the other ſide, to ſleepe: where he noted the light behauiour of her, which could not in one conſtant ſhadow be ſet downe.

And yet for the great good will thou beareſt mee, I cannot reiect thy ſeruiſe, but I will not admit thy loue. But if either my friends,

Euphues and his England.

friends, or my selfe, my goods, or my good will, may stand thee in stead, vse me, trust me, command me, as far forth as thou canst with modestie, and I may grant with mine honour.

If to talke with me, or continually to be in thy company, may in any respect satisfie thy desire; assure thy selfe I will attend on thee as diligently as thy purse, and be more carefull for thee then thy physician. More I cannot promise, without breach of my faith: more thou canst not aske, without the suspicion of folly.

Here Fidus, take this Diamond, which I haue heard old women say to haue bene of great force against idle thoughts, vaine dreams, and franticke imaginations, which if it doe thee no good, assure thy selfe it can doe thee no harme: and better I thinke it against such enchanted fantasies, then either Homers Moly, or Plinies Centauro.

When my Lady had ended this strange discourse, I was stricken into such a maze, that for the space almost of halfe an houre, I lay as it had bene in a trance, mine eyes almost standing in my head without motion, my face without colour, my mouth without breath, insomuch that Iffida began to screech out and call company, which called mee also to my selfe: and then with a faint and trembling tongue I vttered these words.

Ladie, I cannot vse as manie words as I would, because you see I am weake: nor giue so many thanks as I should, for that you deserue infinite. If Thirus haue planted the vine, I will not gather the grapes: neither is it reason, that hee hauing solwen with paine, that I should reape the pleasure. This sufficeth me, and delighteth me not a little, that you are so faithfull, and hee so fortunate. Yet, good Ladie, let me obtaine one small sute, which derogating nothing from your true loue, must needs be lawfull, that is, that I may in this my sicknesse enioy your company, and if I recover, bee admitted as your seruant: the one will hasten my health, the other prolong my life. She courteously granted both, and so carefullie tended mee in my sicknesse, that what with her merrie sporting & good nourishing, I began to gather vp my crums, and in short time to walke into a gallerie neere adioyning vnto my chamber, where she disdained not to lead me, & so at all times to vse me as though I had bene Thirus. Euery euening she would put forth some pretie question, or vtter some merrie conceit to driue me

17049

Euphues and his England.

from melancholic. There was no broth that would dooyn but of her making, no meate but of her dressing, no sleepe enter into mine eies, but by her singing, insomuch as she was both my nurse, my cooke, and my Physitian. Being thus by her for the space of one moneth cherished, I wared strong, as though I had neuer beene sicke.

Now, Philautus, iudge not partially, whether was she a Lady of greater constancie towards Thirus, or courtesie towards mee?

Philautus thus answered. Now surely Fidus, in my opinion, she was no lesse to be commended for keeping her faith inuolable, then to be praised for giuing such alines vnto thee: which good behauiour differeth farre from the nature of our Italian Dames, who if they be constant, they despise all other, that seeme to loue them. But I long yet to heare the end, for me thinketh a matter begonne with such heat, should end with a bitter cold.

Philautus, the end is short and lamentable, but as it is, haue it.

She after long recreating of her selfe in the Countrey, repaired againe to the Court, and so did I also, where I liued (as the Elephant doth by aire) with the sight of my Lady, who euer vsed me in all her secrets, as one that shee most trusted. But my ioyes were too great to last, for euen in the middle of my blisse, there came tidings to Iffida, that Thirus was slaine by the Turkes, being then in pay with the King of Spaine, which battle was so bloody, that many gentlemen lost their liues.

Iffida so distraught of her wits with this news, fel into a phrensie hauing nothing in her mouth but alwaies this; Thirus slaine, Thirus slaine: euer doubling this speech, with such pitifull cries and screeches, as it would haue mooued the souldiers of Vlysies to sorrow. At the last by good keeping, and such meanes as by Physicke was provided, shee came againe to her selfe, vnto whom I wrot many letters, to take patiently the death of him, whose life could not be recalled: diuerse shee answered, which I will shew you at my better leasure. But this is most strange, that no sute could allure her againe to lue, but euer shee liued all in blacke, not once comming where she was most sought for: But within the tearme of five yeeres she began a little to listen to mine old sute of whose faithfull

Euphues and his England.

faithfull meaning she had such triall, as shee could not thinke that either my loue was builded vpon lust or deceit.

But destiny cut off my loue by the cutting off her life, for falling into a hot pestilent feuer she died, and how I toke it, I meane not to tell: but forsaking the Court presently, I haue here liued euer since, and so I meane, till death call me.

Now gentlemen, I haue held you too long, I feare me; but I haue ended at the last. You see what loue is, begun with griefe, continued with griefe, ended with death. A paine full of pleasure, a ioy replenished with misery, a heauen, a hell, a god, a diuell & what not, that either hath in it sense or sorrow: Where the daies are spent in thoughts, the nights in dreames, both in danger either beguiling vs of that we had: or promising vs that we haue not. Full of ieaalousie without cause, and void of feare when there is cause: and so many inconueniences hanging vpon it, as to reckon them all were infinite, and to taste but one of them, intolerable.

Yet in these daies it is thought signes of a good wit; and the onelie vertue peculiar to a Courtier: For loue they say is in yong Gentlemen in clownes it is lust, in old men, dotage, when it is in all men, madnesse.

But you, Philautus, whose blood is in his cheefest heat, are to take greater care, lest beeing ouerwarmed with Loue, it so inflame the liuer, as it driue you into a consumption. And thus the old man brought them in to dinner, where they hauing taken their repast, Philautus, as wel in the name of Euphues as his owne, gaue this answer to this old mans tale, and these or the like thanks for his cost and courtesie.

Father, I thanke you, no lesse for your talke which I found pleasant, then for your counsell which I account profitable, and so much for your great chere and courteous entertainment, as it deserueth of those that cannot deserue any. I perceiue in England the women and men are in loue constant, to strangers courteous, and bountifull in hospitality: the two latter wee haue tried to your cost, the other we haue heard to your paines, and may iustifie them all wheresoeuer we become, to your praises, and pleasure. This onely we craue, that necessity may excuse our boldnesse, and our amends wee will vse such meanes, as although wee cannot
make

17041

Euphues and his England.

make you gaine much, yet you shall léeſe little.

Then Fidus taking Philautus by the hand, ſpake thus to them both.

Gentlemen & friends, I am aſhamed to receiue ſo many thanks for ſo ſmal courteſie: and ſo far off it is for me to looke for amends for my coſt, as I deſire nothing more then to make you amends for your companie and your good will in accounting well of ill fare: onely this I craue, that at your returne, after you ſhall bee feaſted of great perſonages, you vouchſafe to viſit the Cottage of poore Fidus, where you ſhall be no leſſe welcome then Iupiter was to Bacchus: Then Euphues.

Wee haue troubled you too long, and high time it is for poore pilgrimes to take the daie before them, leſt being benighted, they ſtaine courteſie in another place: and as we ſay in Athens, fiſh and gheſſe in thre daies are ſtale: ſotwithſtanding we will bee bold to ſee you, and in the meane ſeaſon we thanke you, and euer, as we ought, we will pray for you.

Thus after many farewels, with as many welcomes of the one ſide, and thankes of the other, they departed, and framed their ſteps towards London. And to dꝛiue away the time, Euphues began to inſtruct Philautus.

Thou ſeeſt Philautus the courteſie of England to ſurpaſſe, and the conſtancie (if the old gentleman told the truth) to excell, which warneth vs both to be thankfull for the benefits we receiue, and circumſpect in the behauiour we uſe, leſt being vnmindfull of good turnes, we be accounted ingrate: and being diſſolute in our lines, we be thought impudent.

When we come into London, we ſhal walke in the garden of the world, where among many floures, we ſhal ſee ſome weeds, ſweet Roſes, and ſharpe Nettles, pleaſant Lillies, and pricking thornes, high Vines, and low hedges. All things (as the ſame goeth) that may either pleaſe the ſight, or diſlike the ſmell, either feed the eie with delight, or fill the noſe with infection.

Then good Philautus let the care I haue of thee be in ſtead of graue counſell, and my good will towards thee in place of wiſdome. I had rather thou ſhouldeſt walke among the beds of wholeſome pothearbs, then the knots of pleaſant floures, and better ſhalt thou finde

Euphues and his England.

finde it to gather Carlike foꝝ thy stomacke, than a sweet Violet foꝝ thy senses. I feare me, Philautus, that seeing the amiable faces of the English Ladies, thou wilt cast off all care both of my counsel & thine owne credit. Foꝝ well I know, that a fresh colour doth easily dim a quicke sight, that a sweet rose doth soonest pierce a fine sent that pleasant sirupes do chiefliest infect a delicate tast, that beautiful women do first of all allure them that haue the wantonest eies, and the whitest mouthes.

A strange Tree there is, called Alpina. which bringeth forth the fairest blossomes of al trees, which the Bee, either suspecting to be venomous, oꝝ misliking because it is so glorious, neither tasteth it, noꝝ commeth neer it. In the like case, Philautus, would I haue thee to imitate the Bee, that when thou shalt behold the amiable blossomes of the Alpine tree in any woman, thou shun them, as a place infected either with poyson to kill thee, oꝝ hony to deceiue thee: foꝝ it were more conuenient thou shouldst pull out thine eies, and liue without loue, than to haue them cleere, and be infected with lust.

Thou must chouse a woman as the Lapidary doth a true Saphire, who when hee seeth it to glister, couereth it with oyle, and then if it shine, he alloweth it: if not, he breaketh it. So if thou fall in loue with one that is beautiful, cast some kind of colour in her face, either as it were misliking her behauiour, oꝝ hearing of her lightnes: and if then she looke as faire as before, woe her, win her, and weare her.

When my good friend, consider with thy selfe what thou art, an Italian: where thou art, in England: whom thou shalt loue, if thou fall into that veine, an Angel. Let not thy eie goe beyond thy eare, noꝝ thy tongue as farre as thy feet. And thus I coniure thee, that of all things thou refraine from the hot fire of affection.

Foꝝ as the pretious stone Aucharficis, being throwne into the fire looketh black, and halfe dead, but being cast into the water, glistereth like the Sunne beames: so the pretious minde of man once put into the flame of loue, is as it were vgly & loseth her vertue, but sprinkled with the water of wisdom, and detestation of such fond delights, it shineth like the glorious raies of Phcebus.

And it shal not be amisse, though my Physick bee simple, to prescribe a straight diet before thou fall into thine old disease.

First, let thy apparel bee but meane, neither too braue to shew thy pride,

17041

Euphues and his England.

pride, nor too base to bewray thy pouertie: be as carefull to keepe thy mouth from wine, as thy fingers from fire.

Wine is the glasse of the mind, and the onely sauce that Bacchus gaue Seres when he fell in loue: be not dainty mouthed, a fine taste noteth the fond appetites that Venus sayd her Adonis to haue, who seeing him to take chiefeft delight in costly rates, smiling said thus.

I am glad that my Adonis hath a sweet tooth in his head, and who knoweth not what followeth? But I will not wade too farre, seeing heretofore, as well in my Cooling card, as at diuers other times, I haue giuen thee a caueat in this vanity of loue, to haue a care: and yet mee thinketh the more I warne thee, the lesse I dare trust thee: for I know not how it commeth to passe, that euery minute I am troubled in minde about thee.

When Euphues had ended, Philautus thus began.

EVphues, I thinke thou wast bozne with this word Loue in thy mouth, or that thou art bewitched with it in minde, for there is scarce three words vttered to me, but the third is Loue, which how often I haue answered, thou knowest, yet that I speak as I thinke, thou neuer beleuest: either thinking thy selfe a God, to know thoughtes, or mee worse than a deuill, not to acknowledge them: when I shal giue any occasion, warne mee, and that I should giue none, thou hast already warned me, so that this perswade thy selfe, I will sticke as close to thee, as the sole to thy shoe.

But truely I must needs commend the courtesie of England, and old Fidus for his constancy to his Lady Iffida, and her faith to her friend Thirsus; the remembrance of which discourse did often bring into my minde the hate I bare to Lucilla, who loued all, and was not found faithfull to any. But I let that passe lest thou come in again with thy saburthen, and hit me in the teeth with Loue, for thou hast so charmed me, that I dare not speake any word that may bee inrested to charity, lest thou say, I meane loue: and in truth I think there is no more difference betwene them, then betwene a bzoome and a besome.

I will follow thy diet and thy counsel, I thanke thee for thy good will, so that I wil now walke vnder thy shadow, and be at thy commandement: not so, answered Euphues, but if thou follow mee, I
dare

Euphues and his England.

dare be thy warrant wee will not offend much. Much talke there was in the way, which much shortened their way: and at the last they came to London, where they met diuers strangers of their friends, who in small space brought them familiarly acquainted with certaine English gentlemen, who much delighted in the company of Euphues, whom they found both sober and wise, yet sometimes merry and pleasant. They were brought into all places of the Citie, and lodged at the last in a Marchants house, where they continued till a certaine breach.

They vsed continually the Court, in the which Euphues tooke such delight, that hee accounted all the praises he heard of before, rather to bee enuious then otherwise, and to be partiall, not giuing so much as it deserued, and yet to bee pardoned because they could not. It happened that these English Gentlemen conducted these two strangers to a place where diuers gentlewomen were: some courtiers, others of the country, where being welcom, they frequented almost euery day for the space of one moneth, entertaining of time in courtly pastimes, though not in the Court: insomuch that if they came not, they were sent for, and so vsed as they had bene country men, not strangers. Philautus with his continuall accesse, and often conference with gentlewomen, began to wean himselfe from the counsel of Euphues, & to wed his eies to the comelines of ladies, yet so warily, as neither his friend could by narrow watching discouer it, neither did he by any wanton countenance betray it: but carrying the image of loue ingrauen in the bottom of his heart, and the picture of courtesie imprinted in his face, he was thought to Euphues courtly, & knowne to himselfe comförtlesse. Among a number of Ladies he fixed his eies vpon one, whose countenance seemed to promise mercy, & threaten mischief, intermedling a desire of liking with a disdaine of loue: shewing her selfe in courtesie to be familiar with all, and with a certaine comely pride to accept none: whose wit would commonly taunt without despight, but not without disorder, as one that seemed to abhorre loue worse then lust, and lust worse then murder: of greater beautie then birth, and yet of lesse beautie then honesty: which gat her more honour by vertue, then nature could by Art, or fortune might by promotion. Shee was ready of answer, yet wary: shyll of speech, yet sweet: in all her passions so temperate,

17041

Euphues and his England.

temperate, as in her greatest mirth none would think her wanton: neither in her deepest griefe, sullen: but alwaies to look with so sober cheerfulnes, as it was hardly thought, whether she were more commended for the grauitie of the aged, or for her courtlinesse of the youth: oftentimes delighted to heare discourses of loue, but euer desirous to be instructed in learning: somewhat curious to keepe her beautie, which made her comely, but more carefull to increase her credit, which made her commendable: not adding the length of a haire to courtlinesse, that might detract the breadth of a haire from chastitie. In all her talke so pleasant, in all her looks so amiable, so graue modestie ioyned with so wittie mirth, that they that were intangled with her beautie, were inforced to prefer her wit before their willes, and they that loued her beautie, were compelled to preferre their affections before her wisdom: whose rare qualities caused so strange euent, that the wise were allured to vanities, and the wantons to vertue, much like the riuer in Arabia, which turneth gold to dross, and durt to siluer. In conclusion, there wanted nothing in this English Angell that Nature might adde for perfection, or fortune could giue for wealth, or God doth commonly bestow on mortall creatures: And more easie it is in the description of so rare a personage, to imagine what she had not, than to repeat all she had. But such a one she was, as almost all they are that serue so noble a Prince: such virgins carry lights before such a Vesta, such Nimphs arrows with such a Diana. But why goe I about to set her in black and white, whom Philautus is now with all colours impoctraying in the Table of his heart? And surely I think by this he is halfe madde, whom long since I left in a great maze.

Philautus viewing all these things, and more then I haue vttered (for that the louers ciepeareth deeper) withdrew himselfe secretly into his lodging, and locking the doore began to debate with himselfe in this manner.

A thrice vnfortunate is he that is once faithfull, and better it is to be a mercilesse souldier, then a true lover: the one liueth by anothers death, the other dieth by his owne life.

What strange fits be these, Philautus, that burn thee with such a heat, that thou shakest for cold, & all thy body in a shivering sweat, in a flaming ice, melteth like ware, & hardneth like that Adamant?

Euphues and his England.

Is it loue? Then would it were death: for likelier it is that I should lose my life then win my loue. Ah Camilla, but why doe I name thee, when thou dost not heare me? Camilla, name thee I wil, though thou hate me. But alas, the sound of thy name doth make me swound for griefe. What is in me that thou shouldst not despise, and what is there not in thee that I should not wonder at? Thou a woman, the last thing God made, and therefore the best. I a man, that could not liue without thee, and therefore the worst. All things were made for man as a Soueraigne, and man made for a woman as a slaue. O Camilla, would either thou hadst bene bred in Italie, or I in England: or would thy vertues were lesse then thy beautie, or my vertues greater then my affections.

I see that India bringeth gold, but England bringeth goodnesse. And had not England bin thrust into a corner of the world, it would haue filled the whole world with wee: Where such women are as wee haue talked of in Italie, heard of in Rome, read of in Greece, but neuer found but in this Island. And for my part (I speake softly because I will not heare my selfe) would there were none such here, or such euery where. Ah fond Euphues, my deare friend, but a simple foole if thou beleue now the Cooling Card: and an obstinate foole if thou doe not recant it. But it may be thou laiest that corde for the eleuation of Naples like an Astronomer. If it were so, I forgiue thee, for I must beleue thee: if for the whole world, behold England where Camilla was borne the floure of courtesie, the picture of comelinesse: one that shameth Venus beeing somewhat fairer, and much more vertuous: and staineth Diana, beeing as chaste, but much more amiable. I, but Philaeus, the more beautie she hath, the more pride: and the more vertue, the more precisenes. The peacocks is a bird for none but Iuno, the Dove for none but Vesta. None must weare Venus in a Table, but Alexander; none Pallas in a ring, but Vlysses. For as there is but one Phœnix in the world, so is there but one tree in Arabia wherein she buildeth: & as there is but one Camilla to bee heard of, so there is but one Caesar that she will like of. Why then, Philautus, what resteth for thee but to die with patience, seeing thou maist not liue with pleasure? When thy disease is so dangerous, that the third letting of blood is not able to recouer thee, when neither Ariadnes thread, nor Sibyllas

17041

Euphues and his England.

bough, no; Medias seede, may remedy thy grieve. Die, die Philautus, rather with a secret scar, then an open scozne. Patroclus cannot maske in Achilles armour without a maim, no; Philautus in English Court without a mocke. ¶, but there is no pearle so hard, but vineger breaketh it, no Diamond so stony, but blood mollifieth, no heart so stiffe, but loue weakeneth it. And what then? Because she may loue one, is it necessary she should loue thee?

Wæ there not infinit in England, who as farre excēde thee in wealth, as she doth all the Italians in wisdome, and are as far aboue thee in all qualities of the body, as she is aboue them in all giftes of the minde? Doest thou not see euery minute the noble youth of England frequent the court with no lesse courage, then thou, cowardise? If courtly bzaury may allure her, who more gallant then they? If personage, who more valiant? If wilty, who more sharpe? If birth, who more Noble? If vertue, who more deuout?

When there are all things in them that should delight a Ladie, and no one thing in thee that is in them; with what face, Philautus, canst thou desire, which they cannot deserue; or with what seruice deserue that, which so many desire before thee?

The more beautie Camilla hath, the lesse hope shouldest thou haue: and thinke not but the bait that caught thee, hath beguiled other Englishmen ere now. Infants they can loue, neither so hard hearted to despise it, no; so simple not to discern it.

Is it likely then, Philautus, that the Fox will let the grapes hang for the goose? or the Englishman bequeath beautie to the Italian? No, no Philautus, assure thy selfe there is no Venus, but shee hath her Temple, where, on the one side Vulcan may knocke, but Mars shall enter: no Saint but hath his shrine, and hee that cannot win with a Pater noster, must offer a penny.

And as rare it is to see the Sunne without a light, as a faire woman without a louer, and as nere infancy to beautie, as the pricke to the Rose, as the skalle to the rinde, as the earth to the roote.

Doest thou not thinke that houely shee is serued and sued by to of thy betters in birth, thy equalls in wealth, inferious in no respect? If then she haue giuen her faith, darest thou call her honour into suspicion of falshood? If shee refuse such vaine delights, wilt thou bying her wisdom into the compasse of folly? If shee
loue

Euphues and his England.

lone so beautifull a peece, then will shee not be vnconstant: If she
bow virginity, so chaste a lady cannot be periured: and of two things,
the one of these must bee true, that either her minde is already so
weaned from loue, that she may not be moued, or so settled in loue
that she is not to bee remoued. I, but it may bee, that so yong and
tender a heart, hath not yet felt the impression of loue: I, but it
cannot bee that so rare perfection should want that which they all
wish, affection. A rose is sweeter in the bud, than full blowne. Yong
twigs are sooner bent then old trees. White Snow sooner melted
then hard Ice: which proueth that the yonger shee is, the sooner
shee is to bee wooed: and the farther shee is the liklier to bee
wonne.

Who will not run with Atlanta, though he be lame: Who would
not wastle with Cleopatra, though he were sicke: Who feareth to
loue Camilla, though he were blind:

Ah beauty, such is thy force, that Vulcan courteth Venus, shee for
comlinesse a goddess, he for uglinesse a diuell: more fit to strike with
a hammer in his forge, than to hold a Lute in her Chamber.

Whither dost thou waide Philautus, in launcing the wound
thou shouldest taint, and picking the heart, which asketh a
plaster:

For in decyphering what she is, thou hast forgotten what thou
thy selfe art, and being dazled with her beauty, thou seest not thine
owne basenesse.

Thou art an Italian, poore Philautus, as much misliked for the vice
of thy Country, as she maruelled at for the vertue of hers: and with
no lesse shame dost thou heare, how if any Englishman bee infected
with any misdemeano, they say with one mouth, he is Italianated:
so odious is that passion to this, that the very man is no lesse hated
for the name, than the Countie for the manners.

Italy, I must loue thee, because I was borne in thee: but if the
infection of the ayre bee such, as whosoever breed in thee is poysoned
by thee, then had I rather bee a Bastard to the Turke Ottomo than
heire to the Emperour Nero.

Thou which heretofore wast most famous for victories, art be-
come most infamous by thy vices: as much disdained now for thy
beastlinesse in peace, as once feared for thy battailes in warre: thy
Cesar

17041

Euphues and his England.

Cæsar being turned to a Vicar, thy Consuls to Cardinals, thy sacred Senate of three hundred graue Counsellors, to a shameles Synode of three thousand greedy Caterpillers. Where there is no vice punished, no vertue praised: where none is long loued if hee doe not ill: where none shall be loued, if he do well. But I leaue to name the sinnes, which no Ciphers can number, and I would I were as free from the infection of some of them, as I am farre from the reckoning of al of them, or would I were as much enuied for good, as thou art pittied for ill.

fin Philautus, would thou hadst neuer liued in Naples, or neuer left it. What new skirmishes dost thou now feele betwene reason and appetite, loue and wisdom, danger and desire!

Shall I goe and attire my selfe in costly apparell? tush, a faire pearle in a Hoziars eare, cannot make him white. Shall I ruffle in new deuises, with Chains, with Bracelets, with Rings & Roabes? Tush, the precious stones of Mansolus Sepulcher, cannot make the dead carcasle sweet.

Shall I curl my hair, colour my face, counterfet Courtlines? tush, there is no painting can make a picture sensible. No, no, Philautus, either swallow the iuice of mādake, which may cast thee into a dead sleepe, or chew the hearbe Cheruel, which may cause thee to mistake euery thing: so shalt thou either die in thy slumber, or thinke Camilla deformed by thy potion. No, I cannot do so, though I would. But suppose thou thinke thy selfe in personage comely, in birth noble, in wit excellent, in talke eloquent, of great reuenewes: yet will this onelie beecast in thy teeth as an obloquie, thou art an Italian.

I, but all that be black, digge not for coles: all things that breed in the mudde, are not Cuets: all that bee bozne in Italy are not ill. Shee will not enquire what most are, but enquire what I am. Euery one that sucketh a wolfe is not rauening, there is no countrie, but hath some that haue worse, none but hath some. And canst thou thinke that an English Gentleman will suffer an Italian to bee his Riual? No no, thou must either put vp a quarrell with shame, or trie the combat with perill. An English man hath three qualities, hee can suffer no partner in his loue, no stranger to bee his equall, nor to be dared by any. When Philautus, bee as wary of thy

Euphues and his England.

thy life, as carefull for thy loue: thou must at Rome reuerence Romulus, in Boetia, Hercules, in England those that dwell there, else shalt thou not liue there. Ah loue, what wrong dost thou me, which once beguiled me with that I had, and now beheadest me for that that I haue not. The loue I bore to Lucilla was cold water, the loue I owe Camilla hot fire: the first was ended with defame, the last must begin with death. I see now that as the resoluation of an Ague is desperate, and the second opening of a vaine deadly: so the renuing of loue is, I know not what to feare me it, worse then death and as bad as what is worst. I perceiue it at the last, the punishment of loue is to liue. Thou art here a stranger without acquaintance, no friend to speake for thee, no one to care for thee, Euphues will laugh at thee if he know it, and thou wilt weepe if he know it not. O infortunate Philautus, borne in the wane of the Moone, & as like to obtaine thy wish, as the wolfe to eat the Moone. But why goe I about to quench fire with a sword, or with affection to mortifie my loue? O my Euphues, would I had thy wit, or thou my will. Shall I vtter this to thee, but thou art more likely to correct my follies with counsell, then to comfort me with any pretty conceit. Thou wilt say that she is a Lady of great credit, and I heere of no countenance. I, but Euphues, low trees haue their tops, small sparks their heat, the flie her splene, the Ant her gall, Philautus his affection, which is neither ruled by reason, nor led by appointment. Thou broughtest me into England, Euphues, to see, and I am blind: to seek aduentures, and I haue lost my selfe: to remedie loue, and am now past cure, much like Scriphuis that olde drudge in Naples, who coueting to heale his bleared eie, put it out. My thoughtes are high, my fortune low: and I resemble that foolish Pilot, who hoiseth by all his sailes and hath no wind, and lancheth out his ship and hath no water. Ah loue, thou takest away my taste, and prouokest mine appetite, yet if Euphues would be as willing to further mee now, as he was once wilie to hinder mee, I should thinke my selfe fortunate, and all that are not amorous to be foles. There is a stone in the flood of Thracia, that whosoever findeth it, is neuer after grieved. I would I had that stone in my mouth: or that my body were in that riuer, that I might either be without grieve, or without life.

Euphues and his England.

And with these words Euphues knocked at the doore, which Philaurus opened pretending drowsinesse, and excusing his absence by idlenesse: vnto whom Euphues said:

Vhat, Philaurus, dost thou shun the Court to sleepe in a corner, as one either cloied with delight, or hauing surfetted wth desire: beleeue me Philaurus, if the winde be in that doore, or thou so deuout to fall from beautie to thy beades, and to forsake the Court to liue in a Cloister, I cannot tell whether I should more wonder at thy fortune, or praise thy wisdom: but I feare mee, if I liue to see thee so holy, I shall be an old man before I die, or if thou die not before thou bee so pure, thou shalt be more maruelled at for thy yeres, then esteemed for thy vertues. In sooth my good sciend, if I should tarrie a yere in England, I could not abide an houre in my chamber, for I know not how it cometh to passe, that in earth I thinke no other paradise, such varietie of delights to allure a courtly eie, such rare puritie to draw a wel disposed mind, that I know not whether they be in England more amorous or vertuous, whether I should thinke my tyme best bestowed in viewing godly Ladies, or hearing godly lessons.

I had thought no woman to excell Liwia in the world, but now I see that in England they be all as good, none worse, many better, insomuch that I am inforced to thinke, that it is as rare to see a beautifull woman in England without vertue, as to see a faire woman in Italie without pride. Courteous they are without coy-nesse but not without courtlinesse: merrie with curiositie, but not without measure, so that conferring the Ladies of Greece with the Ladies of Italie, I finde the best but indifferent, and comparing both countries with the Ladies of England, I account them all starke naught. And truly Philaurus, thou shalt not shoue mee like a ghostly father, for to thee I will confesse in two things my extream folly, the one in louing Lucilla, who in comparison of these, had no sparke of beautie, the other for making a cooling card against women, when I see these to haue so much vertue, so that in the first I must acknowledge my iudgement raw to discerne shadows, and rash in the latter to giue so peremptory sentence: in both I thinke my selfe to haue erred so much, that I recant both, being ready to take any penance thou shalt enioine me, whether it bee a faggot

Euphues and his England.

faggot for heresie, or a fine for hypocrysie. An heretike I was by mine inuectiue against women, and no lesse then an hypocrite for dissembling with thee, for now Philautus, I am of that minde, that women: but Philautus taking hold of this discourse, interrupted him with a sodaine reply, as followeth.

Say Euphues, I can leuell at the thoughts of thy heart by the swordes of thy mouth; for that commonly the tongue vttereth the minde, and the outward speech betraieeth the inward spirit. For as a good roote is knowne by a faire blossome, so is the substance of the heart noted by the shew of the countenance. I can see day at a little hole, thou must halt cunningly if thou beguile a Cripple, but I cannot chouse but laugh to see thee play with the bait, that I feare thou hast swallowed, thinking with a mist to make my sight blind because I should not perceiue thy eyes bleared: but in faith Euphues, I am now as well acquainted with thy conditions, as with thy person, and vse hath made mee so expert in thy dealings, that well thou maist iuggle with the world, but thou shalt neuer be-
ceiue me. A burnt child dreads the fire, he that stumblenth twice at one stone is worthy to breake his shins, thou maist happelie forswear thy selfe, but thou shalt neuer delude me, I know thee now as readily by thy visage, as thy bisage: It is a blind Goose that knoweth not a fore from a ferne bush, and a foolish fellow that cannot discern craft from conscience, being once couselened. But why should I lament thy follies with grieve, when thou seemest to colour them with deceit? Ah Euphues, I loue thee well, but thou hatest thy selfe, and seekest to heape more harmes on thy head by a little wit, then thou shalt euer claw off by thy great wisdom: all fire is not quenched by water, thou hast not loue in a string, affection is not thy slaue, thou canst not leaue when thou listest. With what face Euphues canst thou returne to thy vomit, seeming with the greedie hound to lappe by that which thou didst cast vp? I am ashamed to rehearse the termes that once thou didst vtter of malice against women, and art thou not ashamed now againe to recant them? They must needs thinke thee either enuious vpon small occasion, or amorous vpon a light cause, and then will they all be as ready to hate thee for thy spight, as to laugh at thee for thy loosenesse.

So Euphues, so deepe a wound cannot be healed with so light a

17041

Euphues and his England.

pastime, thou maiest by Art recouer thy skin, but thou canst neuer couer thy scarre: thou maiest flatter with soles because thou art wise, but the wise will euer marke thee for a sole. Then sure I cannot see what thou gainest, if the simple condemne thee of flatterie, and the graue, of folly. Is thy cooling card of this proprietie to quench fire in others, and to kindle flames in thee? Or is it a whetstone to make thee sharp, and be blent? Or a sword to cut wounds in me and cure them in Euphues? Why didst thou write that against thee thou neuer thoughtest? Or if thou didst it, why dost thou not follow it? But it is lawfull for the Physician to surfet, for the shepheard to wander, for Euphues to prescribe what he wil, and doe what he list.

The sicke patient must keepe a strait diet, the silly sheepe a narrow fold, poore Philautus must beleue Euphues, and al louers (he only excepted) are coled with a card of ten, or rather soled with a vaine toy. Is this thy professed puritie to cry Peccauit? Thinking it as great sinne to be honest, as shame to be amorous? thou that didst blaspheme the noble seere of women without cause, dost thou now commit Idolatrie with them without care? Obseruing as little grauitie then in thy vnbridled furie, as thou dost now reason by thy disordinate fancy. I see now that there is nothing more smooth then glasse, yet nothing more brittle: nothing more faire then snow, yet nothing lesse firme: nothing more fine then wit, yet nothing more fickle. For as Polipus vpon what rock soeuer he lighteth, turneth himselfe into the same likenesse: or as the bird Piralis sitting vpon a white cloth, is white: vpon greene, greene: and changeth his colour with euery cloth: or as our changeable silke turned to the Sunne, hath many colours, and turned backe, the contrary: so wit shapeth it selfe to euery conceit, being constant in nothing but in inconstancie.

Where is now thy conference with Atheos, thy deuotion, thy diuinity? Thou saiest that I am fallen from beautie to beads, and I see thou art come from thy booke to beastlinesse, from quoting of the Scriptures to courting with Ladies, from Paul to Ouid, from the Prophets to Poets, resembling the wanton Diophantus, who refused his mothers blessing to heare a song: and thou forsakest Gods blessing to sit in a warme Sunne.

But thou, Euphues, thinkest to haue thy prerogatiue (which others will

Euphues and his England.

will not grant thee for a priuiledge) that vnder the colour of wit thou maiest be accounted wise: and being obstinate, thou art to be thought singular. There is no coine good siluer but thy halfe-peny: if thy Glasse glister, it must needs be gold: if thou speake a sentence, it must be law: if giue a censure, an oracle: if dreame, a prophesie: if coniecture, a truth: insomuch that I am brought into a doubt, whether I should more lament in thee thy want of gouernment, or laugh at thy fained grauity.

But as the rude Poet Cherrillus had nothing to bee noted in his verses but onely the name of Alexander: nor that rurall Poet Darescus any thing to couer his defozmed Ape, but a whit curtaine: so Euphues hath no one thing to shadow his shamelesse wickednesse but onely a shew of wit. I speake all this, Euphues, not that I enuie thy estate, but that I pitie it: and in this I haue discharged the dutie of a friend, in that I haue not winked at thy folly.

Thou art in loue Euphues, contrarie to thine oath, thine hono?, thine honesty: neither would any, professing as thou doest, liue as thou doest, which is no lesse grieve to me, then shame to thee: excuse thou maiest make to me, because I am credulous, but attends to the world thou canst not fram, because thou art come out of Greece to blaze thy vice in England, a place too honest for thee, and thou too dishonest for any place. And this my flat and friendly dealing, if thou wilt not take as I meane, take as thou wilt: I feare not thy force, nor thy friendship: and so I end.

Euphues not a little amazed with the discourteous speech of Philautus, whom hee saw in such a burning feauer, did not apply warme clothes to continue his sweat, but gaue him cold drinke to make him shake, either thinking so strange a maladie was to be cured with a desperate medicine, or determining to vse as little art in Physicke, as the other did honesty in friendship: and therfore in stead of a Bill to purge his hot blood, he gaue him a choake peare to stoppe his breath, replying as followeth.

I had thought Philautus, that a wound healing so faire, could neuer breede to a fistula, or a body kept so well from drinke, to a dropsie: but I well perceined that thy flesh is as ranke as the wolues, who as soone as he is stricken, recouereth a skin, but rankleth inwardly untill it come to the liuer: and thy stomacke as queasie as

17041

Euphues and his England.

old Nestors vnto whom pay was no better then payson: and thy body no lesse distempered then Hermogenes, whom abstinence from wine made oftentimes drunken. I see thy humour is loue, thy quarrell iealousie: the one I gather by thy addle head, the other by thy suspicious nature: but I leaue them both to thy will, and thee to thine owne wickednesse. Pretily cloaking thine owne follie, thou callest me theefe first, not vnlike vnto a curst wife, who deseruing a checke beginneth first to scold. There is nothing that can cure the Kings euill, but a Prince, nothing else a pleurisie but letting blood, nothing purge thy humour, but that which I cannot giue thee, no, thou get of any other, libertie.

Thou seemest to colour craft by a friendly kindnesse, taking great care for my bondage, that I might not distrust thy follies: which is, as though the Thrush in the Cage should be sorie for the Pightingale, which singeth on the tree, or the Beare at the stake lament the mishap of the Lyon in the Forrest.

But in truth Philautus, though thy skinne shew thee a Fore, thy litle skill tryeth thee a sheepe. It is not the colour that commendeth the good Painter, but a good countenance: no, the cutting that valueth the Diamond, but the vertue, no, a glose of the tongue that tryeth a friend, but the faith. For as all coines are not good that haue the image of Caesar, no, all gold that is coined with the kings stampe: so all is not truth that beareth the shew of godlinesse, no, all friends that beare a faire face. If thou pretend such loue to Euphues, cary thy heart on the backe of thy hand, and thy tongue in thy palme, that I may see what is in thy minde, and thou with thy fingers claspe thy mouth. Of a stranger I can beare much, because I know not his manners, of an enemy more, for that all proceedeth of malice: all things of a friend if it bee to trie me, nothing if it be to betray me: I am of Scipioes minde, who had rather that Hanniball should eat his heart with salt, then Lælius griue it with vnkindnesse: and of the like with Lælius, who chose rather to be slaine with the Spaniards, then suspected of Scipio.

I can better take a blister of a nettle, then a pricke of a Rose, more willing that a Raven should pecke out mine eyes, then a Turtle pecke at them. To die of the meate one liketh not, is better than

Euphues aud his England.

than to surfet of that hee loneth: and I had rather an enemy should burie mee quicke, than a friend belie mee when I am dead.

But thy friendship, Philautus, is like a new fashion, which being vsed in the morning, is accounted old before noone: which varietie of changing being oftentimes noted of a graue Gentleman of Naples, who hauing bought a hat of the newest fashion and best blocke in all Italie, and wearing it but one day, it was told him that it was stale, he hung it by in his studie, and viewing all sortes, all shapes, perceiued at the last his old hat againe to come into the new fashion: wherewith smiling to himselfe he said, I haue now liued compasse, for Adams old Apron must make Eue a new kirtle: noting this, that when no new thing could be deuised, nothing could be moze new then the old.

I speake this to this end Philautus, that I see thee as often change thy head as others doe their hats, now being friend to Ajax, because he should couer thee with his Buckler, now to Vlysses, that hee may plead for thee with his eloquence, now to one and now to another, and thou dealest with thy friends, as that Gentleman did with his felt: for seeing not my vaine answerable to thy vanities, thou goest about (but yet the nearest way) to hang mee vp for holy daies, as one neither fitting thy head, nor pleasing thy humour, but when Philautus thou shalt see, that change of friendships shall make thee a fat Calfe, and a leane coffer: that there is no moze holde in a new friend then a new fashion: that hats alter as fast as the Turner can turne his blocke, and hearts as soone as one can turne his backe: when seeing enery one returne to his old wearing, and finde it the best: then compelled rather for want of others, then good will of mee, thou wilt retire to Euphues, whom thou laiedst by the walles, and seeke him as a new friend, saying to thy selfe, I haue liued compasse, Euphues old faith must make Philautus a new friend. Wherein thou resembllest those that at the first comming of new wine leaue the old, yet finding that grape moze pleasant then wholesome, they begin to say as Calisthenes did to Alexander, that he had rather carouse old graines with Diogenes in his dish, then new grapes with Alexander in his standing cup: for of all gods, said he, I loue Aesculapius.

But thou art willing to change, else wouldest thou be unwilling

17049

Euphues and his England.

ling to quarrell: thou keepest onely company out of my sight, with Renaldo thy country man, which I suspecting concealed, and now prouing it doe not care. If he haue better deserved the name of a friend then I, God knoweth: but as Achilles shield being lost on the Sea by Vlysses, was tost by the Sea to the Tombe of Ajax, as a manifest token of his right: so thou being forsaken of Reinaldo, wilt bee found in Athens by Euphues doore, as the true owner. Which I speake not as one doth to loose thee, but carefull thou loose not thy selfe. Thou thinkest an apple may please a child, and euery odde answer appease a friend. No Philautus, a plaister is small amends for a broken head: and a bad excuse will not purge an ill acuser. A friend is long a getting, and sone lost, like a marchants riches, who by tempest loseth as much in two houres, as he hath gathered together in twenty yeeres. Nothing so fast knit as glasse, yet once broken, it can neuer be ioyned. Nothing fuller of mettall then Steele, yet ouer heated, it will neuer be hardened: friendship is the best pearle; but by disdaine, thzowen into vineger, it bursteth rather in peeces, then it will bow to any softnesse.

It is a salt fish that water cannot maketh fresh, sweet Honey that is not made bitter with gall, hard gold that is not mollified with fire, and a miraculous friend that is not made an enemie with contempt. But giue me leaue to examine the cause of thy discourse to the quicke, and omitting the circumstances, I will to the substance.

The only thing thou laiest to my charge is loue, and that is a good ornament. The reason to proue it, is my praising of women, but that is no good argument. Am I in loue Philautus? with whom it should be thou canst not coniecture, and that it should not be with thee, thou giuest occasion.

Priamus began to be iealous of Hercules, when hee knew none did loue her, but when hee loued many: and thou of me, when thou art assured I loue none, but thou thy selfe euery one: but whether I loue or no, I cannot liue quiet, vnlesse I be fit for thy diet: where in thou doest imitate Scyron and Procrustes, who framing a bed of Bzalle to their owne bignesse caused to be placed as a lodging for all passengers, insomuch that none could trauell that way, but hee was infozced to take measure of their shætes: if he were too long

Euphues and his England.

for the bed they cut off his legs for catching colde, it was no place for a lung is, if too short, they racked him at length, it was no pallet for a Dwarf: and certes, Philautus, they are no lesse to bee discom- mended for their crueltie, then thou for thy folly. For in like man- ner hast thou built a bedde in thine owne bryaine, wherein euery one must be of thy length, if he loue, thou cuttest him shorter either with some odde deuise, or greene counsell, swearing rather then thou wouldest not bee beleued, that Protagines portraied Venus, with a Spung sprinkled with sweet water, but if once she wrung it, it would drop blood: that her Ivory combe would at the first tickle the haire, but at the last turne all the haire into Adders: so that nothing is more hatefull then loue. If hee loue not, thou stretchest out like a Wire drawer, making a Wire as long as thy finger, longer then thine arme, pulling on with the Pincers with the shoe- maker a little shoe on a great foote, till thou cracke thy credit, as he doth his fitches, alledging that loue followeth a good wit, as the shadow doth the bodie, and as requisite for a Gentleman, as Steele in a weapon. A wit saiest thou, without loue, is like an Egge without salt, and a courtier void of affection, like salt without sauour. Then as one pleasing thy selfe in thine owne humour, or playing with others for thine owne pleasure, thou roolest all thy wits to sift loue from lust, as the Baker doth the bran from the flower, bringing in Venus with a Tortoise under the foote, as slow to harmes, her Cha- riot drawne with white Swannes, as the cognisance of Vesta, her birds to bee Pigeons, noting pietie: with as many inuentions to make Venus currant, as the Ladies vse sleights in Italic, to make themselues counterfait.

Thus with the Egyptian thou plaiest fast or loose, so that there is nothing more certaine then that thou wilt loue, and nothing more vncertaine then when, turning at one time thy taile to the winde, with the Hedgehog, and thy nose in the wind with the weathercock, in one gale both hoysing saile and weighing Anker, with one breath making an allarum and a parly, discharging in the same instant, both a bullet and a false fire. Thou hast rackt me and curtd me, sometimes I was too long, sometimes too short, now too bigge, then too litle, so that I must needs thinke thy bed monstrous, or my bo- die, either thy bryaine out of temper, or my wits out of tune: inso-

17041

Euphues and his England.

much as can liken thy head to Mercuries pipe, who with one stop caused Argus to stare and winke. If this fault bee in thy nature, counsell can do litle good: if in thy disease, Physick can do lesse: for nature will haue her course, so that perswasions are needlesse, and such a malady in the marrow, will neuer out of the bones, so that medicines are bootlesse.

Thou saiest that all this is for loue, and that I being thy friend, thou art loth to winke at my folly: truly I say with Tully, with faire wordes thou shalt yet perswade mee: for experience teacheth mee, that strait trees haue crooked rotes, smooth baites sharpe hookes, that the fairer the stone is in the Loades head, that more pestilent her poyson is in her bowels: that talke, the more it is seasoned with fine phrases, the lesse it sauoureth of tru meaning. It is a mad Hare that will bee caught with a Labe, and a foolish bird that staie:h the laying salt on her taile, and a blinde goose that comuneth to the Fores sermon. Euphues is not intangled with Philautus charmes. If all were in iest, it was too broad, weighing the place: if in earnest, too bad, considering the person: if to try thy wit, it was folly to bee so: if thy friendship, malice to bee so hastie. Hast thou not read, since thy comming into England, a pretie discourse of one Phiola, concerning the rebuking of a friend: whose reasons, although they were but a few, yet were they sufficient: and if you desire more, I could rehearse infinite. But thou art like the Epicure, whose belly is sooner filled, then his eie: for hee coueteth to haue twenty dishes at his Table, when hee cannot digest one in his stomacke, and thou desirest many reasons to bee brought, when one might serue thy turne, thinking it no Rainbow that hath not all colours, no auncient armorie that is not quartered with sundry coats, no perfect rules that haue not a thousand reasons: and of all the reasons, would thou wouldest follow but one, not to checke thy friend in a brauery, knowing that rebukes ought not to weigh a graine more of Salt then Sugar: but to bee so tempered, as like Pepper they might be hot in the mouth, but like Triacle, wholesome at the heart: so shall they at the first make one blush, if hee were pale, and well considered, better, if he were not past grace.

If a friend offend, he is to bee whipped with a good Purples rod, who when her childe will not bee still, giueth it together both the
twig

Euphues and his England.

twig and the teate, and bringth it a sleep when it is wayward, as well with rocking it, as rating it.

The admonition of a true friend should bee like the practise of a wise Physitian, who wappeth his sharpe pilles in Sugar: or the cunning Chirurgion, who launcing the wound with an yron, immediately applyeth to it soft lint: or as mothers deale with their children for wormes, who put their bitter seedes into sweet Raisins: if this order had been obserued in thy discourse, that interlasing so wete taunts with sugred counsell, bearing as well a gentle raine, as vsing a hard snaffle, thou mightest haue done more with the whiske of a wand, then now thou canst with the plicke of a spur, and auoided that which now thou maist not, extreame unkindnes. But thou art like that kinde Judge which Propertius noteth, who condemning his friend, caused him for the more ease to bee hanged with a silken twist: And thou like a friend, cuttest my throat with a rasor, not with a hatchet for my more honor. But why should I set downe the office of a friend, when thou like our Astenian, knowest what thou shouldest doe, but like them, neuer doest it.

Thou saiest I eat mine owne words in praising women: no Philautus, I was neuer either so wicked or so witlesse to recant truths, or mistake colours. But this I say, that the Ladies in England as far excell all other countries in vertue, as Venus doth all women in beautie. I flatter not those of whom I hope to reape benefite, neither yet to praise them, but that I thinke them women: there is no sword made of Steele but hath yron, no fire made of wood but hath smoke, no wine made of grapes but hath lees, no woman created of flesh but hath faults: and if I loue them, Philautus, they deserue it. But it grieveeth not thee Philautus, that they be faire, but that they are chaste, neither doest thou like me the worse for commending their beautie, but thinkest they will not loue thee well, because so vertuous: wherein thou followest those, who better esteeme the sight of the Rose then the sauour, preferring faire weedes before good hearbs, choosing rather to weare a painted floure in their bosomes, then to haue a wholesome roote in their breaths: which resembleth the fashion of our Maidens in Italy, who buy that for the best cloth that will weare whitest, not that will last longest. There is no more praise to be giuen to a faire face then to a false glasse,

17041

Euphues and his England.

for as the one flattereth vs with a vaine shadow, to make vs proude in our owne conceits, the other sedeth vs with an idle hope, to make vs peeuish in our cotemplations. Chirurgions affirme, that a white veine being stricken, if at the first there spring out blood, it argueth a good constitution of body: and I thinke, if a faire woman hauing heard the suite of a louer, if she blush at the first brunt, and shew her blood in her face, sheweth a well disposed minde: so as vertuous women I confesse, are to be chosen by the face, not when they blush for the shame of some sin committed, but for feare she should commit any, all women should be as Caesar would haue his wife, not onely free from sin, but from suspicion: If such be in the English Court, if I should not praise them, then wouldest thou say, I care not for their vertue, and now I giue them their commendation, thou swearest I loue them for their beautie: So that it is no lesse labour to please thy minde, then a sicke mans mouth, who can relish nothing by the tast: not that the fault is in the meate, but in his malady, nor thou like of any thing in thy head, not that there is any disorder in my sayings, but in thy senses. Thou doest last of all object that which silence might well resolue, that I am fallen from prophets to poets, & returned againe with the dog to my vomit, which God knoweth is as farre from truth, as I know thou art from wisdom. What haue I done Philautus, since my going from Naples to Athens? speake no more then the truth, vtter no lesse, flatter mee not to make me better then I am, be-lie me not to make mee worse, forge nothing of malice, conceale nothing for loue: did I euer vse any vnseemely talke to corrupt youth? Tell me where: did I euer deceiue those that put me in trust? Tell me whom: haue I committed any fact worthy either of death or defame? Thou canst not reckon what: haue I abused my selfe towards my superiours, equals, or inferiours? I thinke thou canst not deuise when. But as there is no woll so white, but the Dier can make it blacke, no apple so sweet but a cunning grafter can change it into a crab: so is there no man so void of crime, that a spitefull tongue cannot make him to bee thought a caitife: yet commonly it falleth out so well, that the cloth weareth the better being died: and the apple eateth pleasanter being grafted, and the innocencie is more esteemed, and thriueth sooner being enuied for vertue then be-lied for malice. For as he that stroke

Isaion

Euphues and his England.

Iason on the stomake, thinking to kill him, brake his impostume with the blow, whereby he cured him: so oftentimes it fareth with those that deale maliciously, who in stead of a sword, apply a salve: and thinking to be ones Priest, they become his Physition. But as the traitor that clippeth the coine of his Prince, maketh it lighter to be weiged, not worse to be touched: so he that by sinister reports seemeth to paire the credit of his friend, may make him lighter among the common sort, who by weight oftentimes are deceived with counterfaits, but nothing empaieth his good name with the wise, who try all gold by the touchstone.

A stranger comming into the Capitoll of Rome, seeing all the Gods to bee engrauen, some in one stone, some in another, at the last he perceiued Vulcan to be wrought in Iuorie, Venus to be carued in Ieat, which long time beholding with great delight, at the last he burst into these words: Neither can this white Iuorie Vulcan make thee a white Smith, neither this faire woman Ieate make thee a faire stone. Whereby he noted that no cunning could alter the nature of the one, nor no nature transfoyme the colour of the other. In like manner I say Philautus, although thou haue shadowed my guiltlesse life with a defamed counterfait, yet shall not thy blacke Vulcan make either thy accusations of force, or my innocencie faultie, neither shall the white Venus which thou hast portraied vpon the black Ieat of thy malice, make thy conditions amiable, for Vulcan cannot make Iuorie black, nor Venus change the colour of Ieate, the one hauing receiued such course by nature, the other such force by vertue.

What cause haue I giuen thee to suspect me, and what occasion hast thou not offered me to detest thee? I was neuer wise inough to giue thee counsell, yet euer willing to wish thee well, my wealth small to doe thee good, yet ready to doe my best. Insomuch as thou couldest neuer accuse me of any discourtesie: vnlesse it were in being more carefull of thee, then of my selfe.

But as all floures that are in one Possegay, are not of one nature, nor all rings that are wzorne vpon one hand, are not of one fashion: so all friends that associate at bed and board, are not of one disposition. Scipio must haue a noble minde: Lælius an humble spirit: Titus must lust after Sempronia, Gysippus must leaue her: Da-

Euphues and his England.

mon must goe take order for his landes, Pithias must carry behind as a pledge for his life: Philautus must doe what hee will, Euphues not what he should. But it may be, that as the sight of diuers colors, make diuers beastes mad: so my presence doth driue thee into this melancholy. And seeing it is so, I will absent my selfe, hire another lodging in London, and for a time giue my selfe to my booke, for I haue learned this by experience, though I be young, that hauins are knowne by the bandes, Lyons by their claws, Cockes by their combes, enuious mindes by their manners. Hate thee I will not, and trust thee I may not: Thou knowest what a friend should be, but thou wilt neuer liue to try what a friend is. Farewell Philautus, I will not stay to heare thee reply, but leaue thee to thy lust. Euphues carrieth his Poesie written in his hand, and ingrauen in his heart, A faithfull friend is a wilfull toole. And so I taking leaue till I heare thee better minded, England shall be my abode for a season, depart when thou wilt, and againe farewell.

Euphues, in a great rage departed, not suffering Philautus to answer one word, who stood in a maze after the speech of Euphues: but taking courage by loue, went immediatly to the place where Camilla was dauncing, and there will I leaue him in a thousand thoughts hammering in his head: and Euphues seeking a new Chamber, which by good friends he quickly got, and there fel to his Pater Noster, where a while I will not trouble him in his prayers.

Now you shall vnderstand, that Philautus, furthered as well by the opportunitie of the time, as the requestes of certaine Gentlemen his friends, was intreated to make one in a Masque: which Philautus perceiuing to be at the Gentlemans house where Camilla lay, assented as willing to goe, as he desired to speed: and all things being in a readinesse, they went with speed: where being welcomed, they daunced, Philautus taking Camilla by the hand, and as time serued, began to boord her on this manner.

It hath bene a custome faire Ladie, how commendable I will not dispute, how common you know, that Masquers do therefore couer their faces, that they may open their affections, and vnder the colour of a daunce discover their whole desires: the benefit of which

Euphues aud his England.

which priuiledge, I wil not vse, except you grant it, neither can you refuse except you breake it. I meane onely with questions to trie your wit, which shall neither touch your honour to answer, noz my honestie to aske.

Camilla tooke him by shoyt, as one not so sake holo to reply, in this manner.

Gentleman, if you bee lesse, you are too bold: if so, too broad, in claiming a custome, wherz there is no prescription. I know not your name, because you feare to vtter it, neither doe I desire it: and you seeme to bee ashamed of your face, else would you not hide it, neither doe I desire it: neither doe I long to see it: but as for a custome, I was neuer so superstitious, that either I thought it treason to breake them, or reason to keepe them.

As for the prouing of my wit, I had rather you should account me a foole by silence, then wise by answering: for such questions in these assemblies, moue suspicion where there is no cause, and therefore are not to be resolved lest there be cause.

Philautus, howeuer as yet but plaid with the baite, was now strooke with the hook, & no lesse delighted to heare her speake, then desirous to obtaine his suite, trained her by the blood in this sort.

If the patience of men were no greater then the perversnes of women, I should then fall from a question to a quarell, for that I perceiue you draw the counterfait of that I would say, by the conceit of that you thinke others haue said: but whatsoeuer the colour be, the picture is as it pleaseth the Painter, and whatsoeuer were pretended, the minde is as the heart doth intend. A cunning Archer is not knowne by his arrow, but by his aime: neither a friendlie affection by the tongue, but by the faith. Which if it be so, me thinketh common courtesie should allow that, which you thinke to cut off by courtly coynesse, as one either too yong to vnderstand, or obstinate to ouerthwart: your peeres shall excuse the one, and your honor pardon the other. And yet Lady I am not of that faint minde, that though I winke at a flash of lightning, I dare not open mine eyes againe, or hauing once suffered a repulse, I should not dare to make fresh assault: he that striketh saile in a storme, hoiseth them higher in a calme, which maketh me the bolder to vtter that which you disdain to heare, but as the Dove seemeth angry, as though

Tha

17049

Euphues and his England.

she had a gall, yet yeldeth at the last to delight : so Ladies pretend a great skirmish at the first, yet are bowed willingly at the last. I meane therefore to tell you this, which is all, that I loue you. And so wizing her by the hand, he ended ; shee beginning as followeth.

Gentleman (I follow my first terme) which sheweth rather my modesty then your desert, seeing you resemble those which hauing once wet their feet, care not how deepe they wade, or those that breaking the Ice, weigh not how farre they slip, thinking it lawful, if one suffer you to goe awry, no shame to goe slipshood : if I should say nothing, then would you vaunt that I am wonne ; for that they that are silent, seeme to consent : if any thing, then would you boast that I would be wooed ; or that castles that come to Parle, and women that delight in courting, are willing to yeld : so that I must either heare those things which I would not, and seeme to be taught by none, or to hold you talke which I should not, and run into the suspicion of others. But certainly, if you knew how much your talke displeaseth me, and how little it should profit you, you would think the time as vainely lost in beginning your talke, as I account ouer long untill you end it. If you build vpon custome, that Spasquers haue liberty to speake what they should not ; you shall know that women haue reason to make them heare what they would not : and though you can vtter by your Wisard whatsoeuer it bee without blushing, yet cannot I heare it without shame. But I neuer looked for a better tale of so ill a face : you say a bad colour may make a good countenance : but hee that conferreth your disordred discourse with your deformed attire, may rightely say, that hee neuer saw so crabbed a visage, nor heard so crooked a veine. An Archer say you, is to bee knowne by his aime, not by his arrow : but your aime is so ill, that if you knew how farre wide from the marke your shaft sticketh, you would hereafter rather breake your Bow then bend it : If I bee too yong to vnderstand your destinies, it is a signe I cannot looke : if too obstinate, it is a token I will not : therefore for you to bee displeased, it either needeth not or booteth not. Yet you goe farther, thinking to make a great vertue of your little valour : saying that lightening may cause you winke, but it shall not strike you blinde : that a stone may make you

Euphues and his England.

you strike saile, but neuer cut the Mast: that a hote skirmish may cause you to retire, but neuer to run away: what your cunning is, I know not, and likely it is your courage is great, yet haue I heard that he that hath escaped burning with lightening, hath been spoiled with thunder; and one that often hath wished drowning, hath bene hanged once for all; and he that shrinketh from a bullet in the maine battle, hath bene stricken with a bill in the rereward. You fall from one thing to another, vsing no Decorum, except this, that you study to haue your discourse as far void of sense, as your face is of fauour, to the end that your disfigured countenance might supply the disorder of your ill couched sentences; among the which, you bring in a Doue without a gall, as farre from the matter you speake of, as you are from the mastery you would haue; who although shee cannot be angry with you, in that shee hath no gall, yet can shee laugh at you, because shee hath a spleene.

I will end where you began, hoping you wil begin where I end: you let fall your question which I looked for, and pickt a quarell which I thought not of, and that is loue: but let her that is disposed to answer your quarell, be curious to demand your question. And thus Gentleman I desire you, all questions and other quarels set apart, you thinke me as a friend, so farre forth as I can grant with modestie, or you require with good maners: and as a friend I wish you, that you blow no more this fire of loue, which will waste you before it warme you, and make a cole in you before it kindle in me: if you think otherwise, I can as well vse a shift to driue you off, as you did a shew to draw me on. I haue answered your custome, lest you should argue me of coinesse, no otherwise then I might, mine honour saued, and your name vnknowne.

By this time entred another Maske, but almost after the same manner, and onely for Camillas loue, which Philautus quickly espied, and seeing his Camilla to bee courted with so gallant a youth, departed, yet within a corner, to the end hee might discipher the Gentleman, whom he found to be one of the brauest youtnes in all England, called Surius: then wounded with griefe, he swooned with weakenes, and going to his chamber, began afresh to recount his miseries on this sort.

Oh miserable and accursed, Philautus, the very monster of Nature

17049

Euphues and his England:

ture, and spectacle of shame, if thou liue, thou shalt be despised : if thou die, not missed : if woe, pointed at : if win, loathed : if lose, laughed at : bzed either to liue in loue and be sozaken, oꝝ die with loue and be sozgotten.

Ah, Camilla, would either I had been bozne without eies not to see thy beauty, oꝝ without eares not to heare thy wit : the one hath enflamed mee with a desire of Venus, the other with the gifts of Pallas, both with the fire of loue : Loue, yea, loue Philautus, then the which nothing can happen vnto man moze miserable. I perceiue now that the Chariot of the Sunne is soꝝ Phœbus, not soꝝ Phaeton ; that Bucephalus will stoepe to none but Alexander ; that none can sound Mercuries Pipe but Orpheus ; that none shall win Camillas liking but Sureus : a Gentleman I confesse of greater birth then I, and yet I dare say, not of greater faith. It is he, Philautus, that will flæte all the fat from thy beard, insomuch as hee will disdain to looke vpon thee, if thee but once thinke vpon him. It is hee Philautus, that hath wit to trie her, wealth to allure her, personage to entice her, and all things that either nature oꝝ Fortune can giue to win her.

Soꝝ as the Phrygian harmonie, being moued to the Calenes, maketh a great noise, but being moued to Apollo, it is still and quiet : so the loue of Camilla desired of me, moueth I know not how many discords, but proued of Surius, it is calme and consenteth. It is not the swæt flower that Ladies desire, but the faire ; which maketh them weare that in their heads, wrought soꝝth with the needle, not brought soꝝth by Nature : and in the like manner they account of that loue which Art can colour, not that the heart can confesse : wherein they imitate the maidens (as Euphues often hath told mee) of Athens, who take moze delight to see a fresh and fine colour, then to taste a swæt and wholesome sirup. I, but how knowest thou that Surius faith is not as great as thine, when thou art assured thy vertue is no lesse then his : He is wise, and that thou seest : valiant, and that thou fearest : rich, and that thou lackest : fit to please her and displace thee, and without spite bee it said, woꝝthie to doe the one, and willing to attempt the other. Ah Camilla, Camilla, I know not whether I should moze commend thy beauty oꝝ thy wit : neither can I tell whether thy lookes haue wounded me

Euphues and his England.

me moze, oꝝ thy woꝝds. Foꝝ they haue woꝝought ſuch an alteration in my ſpirits, that ſeeing thee ſilent, thy comelines maketh mee in a maze: and hearing thee ſpeaking, thy wiſedome maketh mee ſtarke mad. I, but things aboue thy height are to be looked at, not reached at. I, but if I ſhould now end, I had bene better neuer to haue begun. I, but time muſt weare away loue: I, but time may winne it. Hard ſtones are pearced with ſoft drops, great Dakes betwen doꝝne with manie blowes, the ſtonieſt heart mollified by continuall perſwaſions, oꝝ true perſeuerance.

If deſerts can nothing preuaile, I will praſtiſe deceits, and what ſaith cannot doe, coniuring ſhall. What ſaiſt thou Philautus, canſt thou imagine ſo great miſchiefe againſt her thou loueſt? Knoweſt thou not that Fiſh caught with medicines, and women gotten with Witchcraft, are neuer wholeſome? Po, no, the Foxes wiles will neuer enter into the Lions head, noꝝ Medeas charmes into Philautus heart. I, but I haue heard that extreamities are to be uſed where the meane will not ſerue, and that as in loue there is no meaſure of grieſe, ſo there ſhould bee no end of guile, of two miſchiefes the leaſt is to be choſen, and therfoꝝe I think it better to poiſon her with the ſweet baite of loue, then to ſpoile my ſelfe with the bitter ſting of death.

If ſhe bee obſtinate, why ſhould not I be deſperate? If ſhe bee boyd of pittie, why ſhould not I be boyd of pietie? In the ruling of Empires, there is required as great policie as proweſſe: in gouerning an eſtate, cloſe crueltie doth moze good then open clemencie: foꝝ the obtaining of a kingdome, as well miſchiefe as mercie is to be praſtiſed. And then in the winning of my Loue, the verie image of beautie, courteſie, and wit, ſhall I leaue any thing vnſought, vnattempted, vndone? He that deſireth riches, muſt ſtretch the ſtring that will not reach, and praſtiſe all kinds of getting. Hee that coueteth honoꝝ, and cannot climbe by the Ladder, muſt uſe al colours of luſtines. He that thirſteth foꝝ wine, muſt not care how hee get it, but where he may get it: noꝝ hee that is in loue, be curious what meanes he ought to uſe, but readie to attempt any: Foꝝ, ſlender affection do I thinke that, which either the feare of law oꝝ care of religion may diminith. Fie Philautus, thine owne woꝝds condemne thee of wickedneſſe: tuſh, the paſſions I ſuſtaine are neither to bee

17049

Euphues and his England.

quieted with counsell, nor eased by reason: therefore I am fullie resolved, either by Art to win her loue, or by despaire to lose mine owne life.

I haue heard here in London of an Italian, cunning in Mathematicke, named Psellus, of whom in Italy I haue heard in such cases can doe much by Magicke, and will do all things for money, him will I assay, as well with golde, as other good turnes, and I thinke there is nothing that can bee wrought, but shall bee wrought for guilt, or good will, or both. And in this rage, as one forgetting where he was, and whom he loued, he went immediatlie to seeke Physick for that which only was to be found by Fortune.

Here Gentlemen you may see into what open sinnes the heat of loue, driueth man: especiallie, where one louing, is in despaire, either of his owne imperfection, or of his Ladies vertues, to be beloued againe, which causeth man to attempt those things, that are contrary to his owne minde, to religion, to honestie. What greater villanis can there be deuised, then to enquire of Sorcerers, Soothsayers, Coniurers, or learned Clarkes, for the enioying of loue: but I will not reſell that here, which shall be confuted hereafter.

Philautus hath sone found this Gentleman, who conducting him to his studie, and demanding of him the cause of his coming, Philautus beginneth in this manner as one past shame to vnfold his sife.

Maſter Psellus (and Countreiman) I neither doubt of your cunning to satisfie my request, nor of your wisdom to conceale it, for were either of them wanting in you, it might turne me to trouble, and your selfe to shame. I haue heard of your learning to be great in Magicke, and somewhat in Physicke, your experience in both to be requisite, which caused me to seeke to you for a remedie of a certaine grieſe, which by your meanes may bee eased, or else no way cured.

And to the end such cures may be wrought, God hath stirred vp in all times Clarkes of great vertue, and in these our daies men of no small credite, among the which I haue heard no one more commended then you, which although happilie your modestie will denie (for that the greatest Clarkes doe commonlie dissemble their knowledge) or your precisenesse not graunt it, for that cunning
men

Euphues and his England.

men are often more dangerous: yet the world doth well know it, diuers haue tried it, and I must needs believe it.

Psellus not suffering him to range, yet desirous to know his ar-
rant, answered him thus.

Gentleman, and Countryman as you say, I believe; but of that hereafter: if you haue so great confidence in my cunning, as you protest, it may be your strong imagination shall worke that in you, which my Art cannot, for it is a principle among vs, that a vehement thought is more available, then the vertue of our figures, formes or characters. As for keeping your counsell in things honest, it is no matter, and in cases vnlawfull, I will not meddle. And yet if it threaten no man harme, and may doe you good, you shall finde my secrecie to be great, though my science bee small, and therefore say on.

There is not far hence a gentlewoman, whom I haue long time loued, of honest parents, great vertue, and singular beautie, such a one as neither by Art I can describe, nor by seruice deserue, and yet because I haue heard manie say, that where cunning must worke, the whole bodie must be coloured, this is her shape. She is a Virgin of the age of eightene yeeres, of stature neither too high or too lowe, and such was Iuno: her haire blacke, yet comelie, and such had Leda: her eies hazell, yet bright, and such were the lightes of Venus. And although my skill in Physiognomy be small, yet in my iudgement shee was borne vnder Venus, her forehead, nose, lips, and chinne, foreshewing (as by such rules we guesse) both a desire to liue, and a good successe in loue. In complexion a pure sanguine, in condition a right Saint, sildome giuen to plaie, often to praier, the first letter of whose name (for that also is necessarie) is Camilla.

This Ladie haue I serued long, and often sued vnto, insomuch that I haue melted like wax against the fire, and yet liued in the flame, with the flie Pirausta. O Psellus, the tormentes sustained by her presence, the græfes endured by her absence, the pining thoughts in the day, the pinching dreames in the night, the dying life, the liuing death, the iealousie at all times, and the despaire at this instant, can neither be vttered of me without floods of teares, nor heard of thee without græfe.

Euphues and his England.

So Psellus, not the tortures of hell, are either to be compared or spoken of, in the respect of my torments: for what they all had severally, all that and more doe I feele ioyntlie. Insomuch that with Sisyphus I roule the stone euen to the top of the hill, when it tumbleth both it selfe and me into the bottome of hell: yet neuer ceasing, I attempt to renue my labour, which was begun in death, and cannot end in life.

What drier thirst could Tantalus endure then I, who haue almost euerie houre the drink I dare not tast, and the meat I cannot: insomuch that I am torne vpon the wheele with Ixion, my liuer gnawne of the Vultures and Harpies: yea, my soule troubled euen with the vnspeakeable paines of Megara, Tisiphone, Alecto, which secret sorowes, although it were more mete to inclose them in a Labyrinth, then to set them on a hill: yet where the minde is past hope, the face is past shame.

It fareth with me, Psellus, as with the Ostridge, who pricketh none but her selfe, which causeth her to run when shee would rest: or as it doth with the Bellican, who striketh blood out of her owne bodie to do others good: or with the Wood-culuer, who plucketh off her feathers in Winter, to keepe others from colde: or as with the Stork, who when she is least able, carrieth the greatest burthen. So I practise all things that may hurt me, to do her good, that neuer regardeth my paines, so farre shee is from rewarding them. For as it is impossible for the best Adamant to draw Iron vnto it if the Diamond be nere it: so is it not to be looked for, that I with all my seruice, suite, deserts, and what else soeuer that may drawe a woman, would winne Camilla, as long as Surius, a precious Stone in her eyes, and an eye-sore in mine, bee present, who loueth her I know too well, and she him I feare mee better: which loue will breede betwene vs such a deadly hatred, that being dead, our blood cannot be mingled together like Florus and Aegithus, and being burnt, the flames shall part like Polinices and Eteocles, such a mortall enmitie is kindled, that nothing can quench it but death: and death shall not end it. What counsell can you giue me in this case: what comfort: what hope? When Acontius could not perswade Cydippe to loue, hee practised fraude. When Tarquinius could not win Lucretia by prayer, he vsed force. When the Gods could

Euphues and his England.

could not obtaine their desires by sute, they turned themselues into new shapes, leauing nothing vndone for feare they should bee vndone. The disease of loue, Psellus, is impatient, the desire extreame, whose assaults neither the wise can resist by policie, nor the valiant by strength.

Iulius Cæsar a noble Conqueror in war, a graue Counsellor in peace, after he had subdued France, Germany Britaine, Spaine, Italy, Thessalia, Aegypt: yea, entered with no lesse puissance then good fortune into Armenia, into Pontus, into Africa; yelded in his chiefest victories to loue, Psellus, as a thing fit for Cæsar, who conquered all things sauing himselfe: and a deeper wound did the small arrow of Cupid make, then the speares of his enemies.

Hanniball no lesse valiant in armes, nor more fortunate in loue, hauing spoiled Ticinum, Trebia, Trasimena, and Cannæ, submitted himselfe in Apulia to the loue of a woman, whose hate was a terror to all men, and became so bewitched, that neither the feare of death, nor the desire of glorie could remoue him from the lap of his Louer.

I omit Hercules, who was constrained to vse a distaffe for the desire of his loue. Leander, who ventured to crosse the Seas for Hero. Iphis that hanged himselfe. Piramus that killed himselfe, and infinit more which could not resist the hot skirmishes of affection. And so farre hath this humour crept into the minde, that Biblis loued her brother, Myrrha her Father, Canace her Pephew: inso much as there is no reason to bee giuen for so strange a grieue, nor no remedie so vlawfull but is to be sought for so monstrous a disease. My disease is strange, I my selfe a stranger, and my suite no lesse strange then my name, yet lest I be tedious in a thing that requireth hast, giue eare to my tale.

I haue heard often times that in loue there are three things for to be vsed, if time serue, violence: if wealth bee great, golde: if necessity compell, sorcerie. But of these three but one can stand mee in stead, the last, but not the least, which is able to work the minds of all women like war, when the other can scarce wind them like a with. Medicines there are that can bring it to passe, and men there are that haue some by potions, some by dreames, all by deceit: the ensamples were tedious to recite, and you know them,
the

17049

Euphues and his England.

the meanes I come to learne, and you can giue them, which is the onely cause of my conning, and may be the occasion of my pleasure, and certainlie the way both for your praise and profit. Whether it bee an inchaunted leafe, a verse of Pythia, a figure of Amphion, a Character of Orpheus, an Image of Venus, a branch of Sibillo, it skilleth not. Let it bee either the seedes of Media, or the bloud of Phillis, let it come by Oracle of Apollo, or by Prophecie of Tyresias, either by the intrayles of a Goat, or what else soeuer, I care not, or by all these in one, to make sure incantation, and spare not. If I win my loue, you shall not lose your labour, and whether it redound or no to my greater perill, I will not forget your paines. Let this potion be of such force, that shee may doate in her desire, and delight in her distresse. And if in this case you either reueale my sute, or denie it, you shall soone perceiue that Philautus will die as desperatlie in one minute, as hee hath liued thre moneths carefullie: and this your studie shall be my graue, if by your studie you ease not my grieffe. When hee had thus ended, hee looked so sternelie vpon Psellus, that hee wished him farther off, yet taking him by the hand, and walking into his chamber, this good man began thus to answer him.

Gentleman, if the inward spirit bee answerable to the outward speech, or the thoughts of your heart agreeable to the wordes of your mouth, you shall breed to your selfe great discredit, and to me no small disquiet.

Doe you thinke, Gentleman, that the minde being created of God, can be ruled by man, or that any one can moue the heart but he that made it? But such hath bene the superstition of olde Women, and such the follie of yong men, that there could bee nothing so vaine but the one would inuent, nor any thing so senselesse but the other would beleue: which then brought youth into a fooles paradise, and hath now cast age into an open mockage. What the force of loue is I haue knowne, what the effects haue bene, I haue heard, yet could I neuer learne, that euer loue could bee wonne by the vertue of hearbes, Stones, or words. And though many there haue bene so wicked to seeke such means, yet was there neuer any so unhappie to finde them.

Parrhasius painting Hopplytides, could not neither make him that
ranne

Euphues and his England.

canne to sweat, no: the other that put off his armour to breath, adding this as it were for a note, No farther then colours: meaning, that to giue life, was not in his pensill, but in the Gods. And the like may be said of vs, that giue our minds to know the course of the Starres, the Planets, the whole globe of heauen, the simples, the compounds, the bowels of the earth, that some thing wee may guesse by the outward shape, some thing by the nativity, but to wrest the will of man, or to wreath his heart to our humors, it is not in the compasse of Art, but in the power of the most highest.

But for because there haue been many without doubt that haue giuen credit to the vaine illusions of Witches, or the fond inventions of idle persons: I will set down such reasons as I haue heard, and you will laugh at: so I hope I shall both satisfie your minde, and make you a little merry: for me thinketh there is nothing that can more delight, then to heare the things which haue no waight to be thought to haue wrought wonders.

If you take Pepper, the seed of a Pettie, and a little quantitie of Pyretum, beaten or pounded altogether, and put into Wine of two yeeres old, whensoever you drinke to Camilla, if shee loue you not, you lose your labour. The cost is small, but if your beleefe be constant, you winne the goale: for this receite standeth in a strong conceite.

Egges and Hony blended with the Juts of a Pine-tree, and laid to your left side, is of as great force when you looke vpon Camilla, to bewitch the minde, as the quintessence of a Stockfish is to nourish the body.

An hearbe there is called Anacamforitis, a strange name, and doubtlesse of a strange nature, for whosoever toucheth it, falleth in loue with the person shee next lieth. It groweth not in England, but here you shall haue that which is not halfe so good, that will doe as much good, and yet truely no more.

The hearbe Carisum moistened with the blood of a Lizard, and hanged about your necke, will cause Camilla, (for her you loue best) to dreame of your seruices, lutes, desires, deserts, and whatsoeuer you would wish her to thinke of you: but being awaked, shee shall not remember what she dreamed of. And this hearbe is to be found in a Lake neere Boetia: of which water who so drinketh, shall bee

17041

Euphues and his England.

taught in loue, but neuer finde the hearbe : and if he drinke not, the hearbe is of no force.

There is in the Frogges side a bone called Apocyon : and in the head of a yong Colte, a hunch named Hyppomanes, both so effectually for the obtaining of loue, that who so getteth either of them, shall win any that are willing : but so iniuriously hath both craft and nature dealt with yong Gentlemen that seeke to gaine good will by these meanes, that the one is licked of before it can be gotten, the other breaketh as sone as it is touched. And yet vnlesse Hyppomanes be licked, it cannot worke, and except Apocyon bee found it is nothing worth.

I omit the Whistle Eringum, the hearbes Catanenci, and Pyruina, Iuba his Charito Blapheton, and Orpheus Staphelinus, all of such vertue in cases of loue, that if Camilla should but taste any one of them in her mouth, she would neuer let it go downe her throat, lest she should be poisoned : for, well you know Gentleman, that loue is a poison, and therefore by poison it must be maintained.

But I will not forget as it were the Nithydate of the Magicians, the beast Hiena, of whom there is no part so small or so vile, but it serueth for their purpose : insomuch that they account Hiena their God that can doe ail, and their deuill that will doe all.

If you take seven haire of Hienas lippes, and carie them sixedaies in your teeth, or a peece of her skinne next your bare heart, or her belly girded to your left side, if Camilla suffer you not to obtaine your purpose, certainly she cannot choose but thanke you for your paines.

And if you want medicines to win women, I haue yet more: the lungs of a Vulture, the ashes of Stello, the left Stone of a Cocke, the tong of a Goose, the braine of a Cat, the last haire of a Molues taile, things easie to bee had, and commonly practised, so that I would not haue thee stand in doubt of thy loue, when either a yong Swallow famished, or the shrouding sheet of a deare friend, or a Warren Taper that burnt at his feete, or the inchaunted Needle that Medea hidde in Iasons sleeue, are able, not onelie to make them desire loue, but also die for loue. How doe you now feelee your selfe, Philautus? If the least of these charmes be not sufficient

Euphues and his England:

cient for thee, all exorcismes and coniurations in the world will not serue thee.

You see Gentleman, into what blinde and grosse errors in old time we were led, thinking euery old wifes tale to be a truth, and euery merrie word, a very witchcraft. When the Egyptians sel from their God to the Priest Memphis, and the Grecians from their morall questions, to their disputations of Pyrrhus, and the Romanes from religion to policy, then began all superstition to breed, and all impietie to blome, and to be so great they are both growne, that the one being then an infant, is now an Elephant, and the other being then a twig, is now a Tree.

They inuented as many inchauntmentes for loue, as they did for the tooth-ache: but hee that hath tried both, will saie, that the best charme for a tooth-ache is to pull out the tooth, and the best remedie for loue is to weare it out. If incantations or potions, or amorous sayings could haue preuailed, Circis would neuer haue lost Vlysses, nor Phædra Hippolitus, nor Phillis Demophoon. If coniurations, Charecters, Circles, Figures, Fiendes, or Furies, might haue wrought any thing in loue, Medea would neuer haue suffered Iason to altar his minde. If the sirups of Micaonias, or the verses of Aeneas, or the Satyren of Diplas, were of force to moue the minde, they all three would not haue bene martyred with the torments of loue. No, no, Philautus, thou maiest well poison Camilla with such dregges, but neuer perswade her: for I confesse that such hearbes may alter the bodie from strength to weaknes, but to thinke that they can moue the minde from vertue to vice, from chastity to lust, I am not so simple to beleue, neither would I haue thee so sinfull as to doe it.

Lucilla ministring an amorous potion vnto her husband Lucretius, procured his death, whose life she onely desired.

Aristotle noteth one that being inflamed with the loue of a faire Ladie, thought by medicine to procure his blisse, and wrought in the end his bane: so was Caligula slaine of Cæsonia, and Lucius Lucullus of Calistine. Perswade thy selfe Philautus, that to vse hearbes to winne loue, will weaken thy bodie, and to thinke that hearbes can further, doth hurt the soule: for as great force haue they in such cases, as noble men thought them to haue in the old

Euphues and his England.

time. Achimenius the hearb was of such force, that it was thought if it were throwne into the battaile, it would make all the Souldiours tremble: but where was it when the Humber and Trent were exiled by warre: where grew Achimenius then: one of whose leaues would haue saved a thousand liues.

The Kings of Persia gaue their souldiours the Plant Larace, which who so had, should haue plentie of meate, and money, & men, and all things: but why did the souldiours of Caesar endure such famine in Pharsalia, if one hearbe might haue eased so many heartes: Where is Balis that Iuba so commendeth, the which could call the dead to life, and yet he himselfe died?

Democrites made a confection, that whosoever drank it, should haue a faire, a fortunate, and a good child. Why did not the Persian kings swallow this Nectar, hauing such deformed and unhappy issue: Cato was of that minde, that three enchanted wordes could heale the eie-sight: and Varro, that a verse of Sibilla could ease the gout: yet the one was faine to vse running water, which was but a colde medicine, the other patience, which was but a dry plaister.

I would not haue thee thinke, Philautus, that loue is to bee obtained by such meanes, but onely by Faith, Vertue, and Constancie. Philip King of Macedon, casting his eie vpon a faire Virgin, became enamoured, which Olimpias his wife perceiuing, thought him to be enchanted, and caused one of her seruants to bring the Maiden vnto her, whom she thought to thrust both to exile and shame: but beleeving her faire face without blemish, her chaste eies without glauncing, her modest countenance, her sober and womanly behauiour, finding also her vertues to bee no lesse then her beautie, she said, In my selfe there are charmes, meaning that there was no greater enchantment in loue, then temperance, wisdom, and chastitie. Fend therefore is the opinion of those, that thinke the minde to be tied to Magike: and the practise of those, filthy that seeke those meanes. Loue dwelleth in the minde, in the will, and in the heart, which neither Coniurer, nor Physicke can alter. For as credible it is that Cupid shooteth his arrow, and bitteth the heart, as that hearbs haue the force to bewitch the heart: onely this difference there is, that the one was a fiction of Poetry, the other of superstition. The will is placed in the soule, and who can enter

Euphues and his England.

enter there, but he that created the soule?

No, no, Gentlemen, whatsoeuer you haue heard touching this, beleeue nothing: for they (in mine opinion) which imagine that the minde is either by incantation, or exorcitation to bee ruled, are as far from truth, as the East from the West, and as nere impietie against God, as they are to shame among men, and so contrarie is it to the profession of a Christian, as Paganisme. Suffer not your selfe to be ledde with that vile conceit, practise in your loue all kind of loyaltie. Be not mute, nor full of babble: bee sober, but auoide fullennesse: vse no kinde of ryot, either by banquetting, which procureth surfets: nor in attire, which hasteth beggerie. If you thinke well of your wit, be alwaies pleasant: if ill, bee often silent: in the one, thy talke shall procure thee sharpe, in the other, thy modestie wise. All fish are not caught with flies, all women are not allured with personage. Frame Letters, Ditties, Musick, and all meanes that honestie may allow: for hee woeth well that meaneth no ill, and he speedeth sooner that speaketh what he should, then hee that uttereth what he will. Beleeue me, Philautus, I am now old, yet haue I in my head a loue-tooth, & in my minde there is nothing that more pearceth the heart of a beautifull Lady, then wyting, where thou maist so set downe thy passions, and her perfection, as she shall haue cause to thinke well of thee, and better of her selfe: but yet so warily, as neither thou seeme to praise her too much, or debase thy selfe too lowly: for if thou flatter them without meane, they loath, and if thou make of thy selfe aboue reason, they laugh at it: temper thy words so well, and place euery sentence so wisely, as it may be hard for her to iudge, whether thy loue bee more faithfull, or her beautie amiable. Lions fawns when they are clawed, Tygars stope when they are tickled, Bucephalus lieth downe when hee is carried, women yeld when they are courted. This is the poyson Philautus, the inchantment, the potion, that creepeth by sleight into the minde of a woman, & catcheth her by assurance, better then the fond deuices of old dreames, as an Apple with an Aue Marie, or a Wafell wand of a yere old, Crosses with fire characters, or the picture of Venus in Virgin ware, or the Image of Camilla vpon a Soulewarps skin. It is not once mentioned in the English Court, nor so much as thought of in any ones conscience, that loue can be

Euphues and his England.

procured by such meanes, or that any can imagine such mischief, and yet I feare me it is too common in our Countrey, whereby they incurre hate of euery one, and loue of none.

Touching my cunning in any vile deuices of Magike, it was neuer my studie, only some delight I took in the Mathematiks, which made me knowne of more then I would, and of more then thinke well of mee, although I neuer hurt or hindred any. But bee thou quiet Philautus, and vse those meanes that may win thy loue, not those that may shorten her life, and if I can any waies stand thee in stead, vse me as thy poore friend and Countreiman, harme will I doe thee none, good I cannot. My acquaintance in Court is small, and therefore my dealings about the Court shall be few, for I loue to stand aloofe from loue, and lightning. Fire giueth light to things farre off, and burneth that which is next to it. The Court shineth to me that come not there, but cingeth those that dwell there. Only my counsell vse, that is in wyting, and me thou shalt find secret, wishing thee alwaies fortunate, and if thou make mee partaker of thy successe, it shall not turne to thy griefe, but as much as in me lieth, I will further thee. When he had finished this discourse, Philautus liked very well of it, and thus replied.

Well, Psellus, thou hast wrought that in mee, which thou wishest: for if the baits that are laide for beautie bee so ridiculous, I thinke it of as great effect in loue, to vse a plaister as a potion. I now vtterlie dissent from those that imagine Magike to bee the meanes, and consent with thee that thinkest letters to be, which I wil vse. And how I speed I will tel thee, in the meane season pardon me, if I vse no longer answer: for well you know, that he that hath the fit of an Ague vpon him hath no list to talke, but to tumble, and loue pinching me, I haue more desire to chide vpon melancholie, then to dispute vpon Magike: but hereafter I will make repaire vnto you, and what I now giue you in thanks, I will then requite with amends.

Thus these two Countreimen parted with certaine Italian imbrassings and tearmes of courtesie, more then common. Philautus we shall find in his lodging, Psellus we will leaue in his study, the one musing of his loue, the other of his learning.

Here Gentlewomen you may see how iustly men seeke to intrap

Euphues and his England.

trap you when scornfully you goe about to reiect them, thinking it not vnlawfull to vse Art when they perceiue you obstinate, their dealings I will not allow, neither can I excuse yours, and yet what should be the cause of both, I can guesse.

When Phidias first painted, they vsed no colours but blacke, white, redde, and yellow: Xeuxis added greene, and euery one inuented a new shadowing. At the last it came to passe, that hee in painting deserued most praise that could set downe most colours: whereby there was more contention kindled about the colour, then the counterfait, and greater emulation for verity in shew, then workmanship in substance.

In the like manner hath it fallen out in loue: when Adam wooed, there was no policy but plaine dealing: in colours but blake, and white; affection was measured by faith not by fancy, hee was not curious, nor Eue cruell: he was not enamoured of her beautie, nor shee allured by his personage: and yet, then was shee the fairest woman in the world, and he the properest man. Since that time, euery Louer hath put to a Linke, and made of a ring, a chaine, and an odde corner, and framed of a plaine Alley, a crooked knot, and of Venus Temple, Dædalus Labyrinth. One curled his haire, thinking loue to bee moued with faire lookes; another laieth all his liuing vpon his backe, iudging that women are wedded in brauery: some vse discourses of loue to kindle affection: some ditties to allure the minde: some Letters to stirre the appetite, diuers sighing to proue their manhoode: sundry sighing to shew their maladies: many attempt with shewes to please their Ladies eyes: not few with musike to entise the eare: insomuch that there is more strife now, who shall be the finest louer, then who is the faithfulllest.

This causeth you, Gentlewomen, to pick out those that can court you, not those that loue you, and he is accounted the best in your conceits that vseth most colours, not that sheweth greatest courtesie. A plaine tale of faith you laugh at, a picked discourse of fancie you maruell at, condemning the simplicity of truth, and preferring singularity of deceit: wherein you resemble those fishes that rather swallow a faire baite with a sharpe hooke, then a soule worne breeding in the mud,

Hereof

14049

Euphues and his England.

Whereof it cometh, that true Lovers receiuing a floute for their faith, and a mocke for their good meaning, are inforced to seek such meanes as might compel you, which you knowing impossible, maketh you the more disdainfull, and then the more desperate. This then is my counsell, that you vse your louers like friends, and chouse them by their faith, not by the shew, but by the sound, neither by the waight, but by the touch, as you doe gold: so shal you be praised as much for vertue, as beauty. But returne wee againe to Philautus, who thus began to debate with himselfe.

What hast thou done, Philautus, in seeking to wound her that thou desirest to winne? With what face canst thou looke on her thou soughtest to lose? Fie, fie, Philautus, thou bringest thy good name into question, and her life into hazard, hauing neither care of thine owne credit, nor her honour. Is this the loue thou pretendest, which is worse then hate? Dost not thou seeke to poison her that neuer pinched thee? But why doe I recount those things which are past, and I repent? I am now to consider what I must doe, and what I would haue done. Follies past shall be worne out with faith to come, and my death shall shew my desire. Write Philautus what saist thou? write? no, no, thy rude stile: will be way thine estate, & thy rash attempt wil purchase thy ouerthrow. Venus delighteth to heare none but Mercurie; Pallas will bee stolne of none but Vlisles; it must be a smooth tongue and a sweet tale that can inchaunt Vesta.

Besides that, I dare not trust a messenger to cary it, nor her to read it, lest in shewing my letter, she disclose my loue, and then shal I bee pointed at of those that hate mee, and pittied of those that like me: of her scorned, of all talked of. No, Philautus, bee not thou the by-word of the common people, rather suffer death by silence, then derision by writing.

I, but it is better to reueale thy loue then conseale it: thou knowest not what bitter poison lieth in sweet words: remember Psellus, who by experience hath tried, that in loue one letter is of more force then a thousand looks. If they like writings, they read them often, if dislike them, run them ouer once: and this is certaine, that she that readeth such toies, will also answer them. Onely this, be secret in conueiance, which is the thing they chieftest desire. Then

Euphues and his England.

Then write, Philautus, write: he that feareth euery bush must neuer goe a birding: he that casteth all doubt, shall neuer bee resolved in any thing. And this assure thy selfe, that be thy Letter neuer so rude and barbarous, she will read it, and bee it neuer so louing, shee will not shew it, which were a thing contrary to her honour, and the next way to call her honesty into question. For thou hast heard, yea, and thy selfe knowest, that Ladies that vaunt of their Letters, are accounted in Italy counterfait, and in England they are not thought currant.

Thus Philautus determined, hab nab to send his Letters, flattering himselfe with the successe which he to himselfe fained: and after long musing, he thus began to frame the minister of his loue.

To the fairest Camilla.

HARD is the choice, faire Lady, when one is compelled either by silence to die with griefe, or by writing to liue with shame: but so sweet is the desire of life, and so sharpe are the passions of loue, that I am enforced to preferre an vnseemely sute before an vntimely death. Loath I haue been to speake, and in despaire to speed, the one proceeding of mine owne cowardice, the other of thy cruelty. If thou require my name, I am the same Philautus, which for thy sake of late came disguised in a Maske, pleading custome for a priuilege and courtesie for a pardon. The same Philautus, which then in secret tearms coloured my loue, and now with bitter teares bewraie it. If thou nothing esteeme the brinish water that falleth from mine eyes, I would thou couldest see the warme blood that droppeth from my heart. Oftentimes I haue been in thy company, whers easily thou mightest haue perceiued my swan cheeks, my hollow eyes, my scalding sighes, my trembling tongue, to foreshew that then which I confesse now. Then consider with thy selfe, Camilla, the plight I am in by desire, and the perill I am like to fall into by deniall.

To recount the sorrows I sustaine, or the seruice I haue bowed, would rather breed in thee an admiration then a beleefe: onely this I adde for the time, which the end shall try for a truth, that if thy answer bee sharpe, my life will bee short: so farre hath loue wrought in my pining and almost consumed body, that thou onely maist breathe into me a new life, or bereaue me of the old. Thou art

17049

Euphues and his England.

art to weigh, not how long I haue loued thee, but how faithfully, neither to examine the worthynesse of my person, but the extremities of my passions : so preferring my deserts before the length of time, and my disease before the greatnesse of my birth ; thou wilt either yeeld with equity, or deny with reason : of both the which, although the greatest bee on my side, yet the least shall not dislike mee, for that I haue alwaies found in thee a mind neither repugnant to right, nor void of reason.

If thou wouldest but permit me to talke with thee, or by writing suffer me at large to discourse with thee, I doubt not but that both the cause of my loue would be beleued, and the extremity rewarded, both proceeding of thy beauty and vertue : the one able to allure, the other ready to pittie. Thou must not think that God hath bestowed those rare gifts vpon thee to kill those that are caught, but to cure them. Those that are stung of the Scorpion, are healed of the Scorpion : the fire that burneth, taketh away the heat of the burne. The Spider Phalangium that poisoneth, doth with her skin make a plaister for poison ; and shall thy beauty, which is of force to winne all with loue, be of the cruelty to wound any to death ? Po Camilla, I no lesse delight in thy faire face, then pleasure in thy good conditions ; assuring my selfe that for affection without lust, wilt not render malice without cause.

I omit my care, to thy consideration, expecting thy Letter, either as a cullise to preserve, or as a sword to destroy ; either as Antidotum, or as Aconitum : If thou delude me, thou shalt not long triumph ouer me liuing, and small will thy glozy bee when I am dead. And I end,

Thine euer, though he be
neuer thine, Philautus.

This Letter being ended, he studied how it might bee conueied, knowing it to bee no lesse perilous to trust those he knewe not in so weighty a case, then difficult for himselfe to haue opportunity to deliuer it in so suspicious a companie : At the last, taking out of his Closet a faire Poingranat, and pulling all the kirkels out of it, hee wrapped his Letter in it, closing the top of it finely, that it could not be perceiued, whether Nature againe had kint it of purpose

Euphues and his England.

pose to further him, or his Art had overcome Natures cunning. This Pomegranat he took, being himselfe both messenger of his Letter, and the Paister, and insinuating himselfe into the company of the Gentlewomen, among whom also was Camilla, hee was welcomed, as well for that hee had bene long time absent, as for that hee was at all times pleasant: much good communication was there touching manie matters, which heere to insert, were neither conuenient, seeing it doth not concerne the historie, nor expedient, seeing it is nothing to the deliuerie of Philautus letter. But thus it fell out in the end. Camilla, whether longing for so faire a Pomegranat, or willed to aske it, yet loth to require it, she sodainlie complained of an old disease, wherewith shee many times felt her selfe grieved, which was an extreme heate in the stomacke, which aduantage Philautus marking, would not let slip when it was purposelie spoken, that she should not giue him the slip, and therefore as one glad to haue so conuenient a time to offer both his dutie and his deuotion, he began thus.

I haue heard, Camilla, of Physicians, that there is nothing either more comfutable, or more profitable for the stomack or inflamed Liuer, then a Pomegranat: which if it be true, I am glad that I came in so good time with a medicine, seeing you were in so ill a time surprised with your maladie: and verily this will I say, that there is not one kinnell, but is able both to ease your paine, and to double your pleasure, and with that he gaue it to her, desiring that as shee felt the working of the potion, so shee would consider of the Physition.

Camilla, with a smiling countenance, neither suspecting the craft, nor the conueier, answered him with these thanks.

I thanke you, Gentleman, as much for your counsell as your courtesie: and if your cunning be answerable to either of them, I will make you amends for all of them: yet I will not open so faire a fruite as this is, vntill I feele the paine that I so much feare. As you please, quoth Philautus: yet if euery morning you take one kinnell, it is the way to preuent your disease: and mee thinks that you should be as carefull to worke means before it come that you haue it not, as to vse meanes to expell it when you haue it.

I am content, answered Camilla, to trie your Physicke, which

Euphues and his England.

as I know it can doe mee no great harme, so it may doe mee much good.

In truth said one of the Gentlewomen then present, I perceiue this Gentleman is not onely cunning in Physicke, but also very carefull for his Patient.

It behoueth (quoth Philautus) that he that ministreth to a Lady, bee as desirous of her health, as his owne credit, for that there redoundeth more praise to the Physitian that hath a care to his charge, then to him that hath onely a shew of his Art. And I trust Camilla will better accept of the good will I haue to rid her of her disease, then the gift, which must worke the effect.

Otherwise, quoth Camilla, I were very much to blame, knowing that in many, the behauiour of the man hath wrought more then the force of the medicine. For I would alwaies haue my Physitian of a cheerefull countenance, pleasantly conceited, and wel proportioned: that hee might haue his sharpe potions mixed with sweet counsell, and his sower drugges mitigated with merrie discourses. And this is the cause that in old time they painted the God of Physicke, not like Saturne, but Aesculapius, of a good complexion, fine wit and excellent constitution. For this I know by experience, though I be but young to learne, and haue not often bene sicke, that the sight of a pleasant and quicke witted Physitian, hath remoued that from my heart with talke, that hee could not with all his Treacle.

That might wel be, answered Philautus, for the man that wrought the cure, did perchance cause the disease, and so secret might the grief be, that none could heale you but he that hurt you, neither was your hart to be eased with any inward potion, but by some outward perswasion: and then it is no maruell if the ministring of a few words were more available then Pithridate.

Well Gentleman, said Camilla, I will neither dispute in Physicke wherein I haue no skill, neither answer you to your last surmises which you seeme to leuell at, but thanking you once againe both for your gift and good will, wee will vse other communication, not forgetting to aske for your friend Euphues, who hath not long time bene where he might haue bene welcommed at al times, and that he came not with you at this time, wee both maruell and would

Euphues and his England.

would faine know.

This question so earnestlie asked of Camilla, and so hardlie to bee answered of Philautus, nipped him in the head: notwithstanding, lest he should seeme by long silence to incurre some suspicion, hee thought a bad excuse better then none at all, saying, that Euphues was now adaies become so studious, (or as he feared it, superstitions) that he could not himselfe so much as haue his company.

Belike, quoth Camilla, hee either espied some new faults in the women of England, whereby hee seeketh to absent himselfe, or some old haunt that will cause him to soyle himselfe. Not so, answered Philautus, and yet that it was said so, I will tell him.

Thus after much conference, many questions, and long time spent, Philautus, tooke his leaue, and being in his Chamber, was will there leaue him, with such cogitations as they commonlie haue, that either attend the sentence of life or death at the Barre, or the answer of hope or despaire of their loues, which none can set downe but he that hath them, for that they are not to be vttered by the coniecture of one that would imagine what they should bee, but by him that knoweth what they are.

Camilla the next morning opened the Poingranat, and saw the Letter: which reading, pondering and perusing, she fell into a thousand contrarieties, whether it were best to answer it or not. At the last, enflamed with a kinde of choler, for that she knew not what belonged to the perplexities of a loue, she requited his fraud and loue, with anger and hate, in these termes or the like.

To Philautus.

I Did long time debate with my selfe, Philautus, whether it might stand with mine honor to send thee an answer: for comparing my place with my person, mee thought thy boldnes more then either good manners in thee would permit, or I with modestie could suffer; yet at the last, casting with my selfe that the heat of thy loue might cleane bee raced with the coldnesse of thy Letter, I thought it good to commit an inconuenience, that it might preuent a mischiefe, choosing rather to cut thee off short by rigour, then to giue thee any iot of hope or silence. Greene sores are to be dressed roughly, lest they fester: Lettars to be drest in the beginning, lest they spread: King-wormes to bee anointed when they first appeare,

E uphues and his England.

appeare, lest they compasse the whole bodie, and the assaults of loue to be beaten backe at the first siege, lest they undermine at the second. Fire is to be quenched in the sparke, Vices are to be rooted in the bud, follies in the blossome.

Thinking this morning to trie my Physicke, I perceiued thy fraud, insomuch that the kirkell that should haue cooled my stomack with moistnes, hath kindled it with choler, making a flaming fire where it found but hot embers: conuerting, like the spider, a sweete flower into a bitter poison. I am not, Philautus, an Italian Ladie, who commonlie are wooed with leasing, and won with lust, entangled with deceit, and enioied with delight, caught with sinne, and cast off with shame.

For mine owne part, I am too young to know the passions of a Louer, and too wise to believe them: and so far from trusting any, that I suspect all: not that there is in every one practise to deceiue, but there wanteth in me a capacitie to conceiue.

Seeke not then, Philautus, to make the tender twigge crooked by Art, which might haue growne straight by nature. Corne is not to be gathered in the blade, but in the eare: no fruit to be pulled from the Tree when it is greene, but when it is mellow: no Grapes to be cut for the presse when they first rise, but when they are full ripe: no young Ladies to bee sued vnto, that are fitter for a rodde then a husband, and meeter to beare blowes then chilozen. You must not thinke of vs as of those in your owne Countrie, that no sooner are out of the cradle, but they are sent to the Court, and wooed sometimes before they are weaned, which bringeth both the Nation and their names, not in question onely of dishonestie, but into obloquie.

This I would haue thee to take for a flat answer, that I neither meane to loue thee, nor hereafter, if thou follow thy sute, to heare thee. Thy first practise in the Masque I did not allowe: the second by thy writing I mislike: if thou attempt the third meanes, thou wilt enforce mee to vtter that, which modestie now maketh me to conceale. If thy god will bee so great as thou tellest, seeke to mittigate it by reason, or time. I thanke thee for it, but I cannot requite it, vnlesse thou either were not Philautus, or I not Camilla. Thus pardoning thy boldnesse vpon condition, and resting thy
friend

Euphues and his England.

friend if thou rest thy suite, I end.

Neither thine, nor her owne,
Camilla.

This Letter Camilla stitched in an Italian Petrарke which shee had, determining at the next comming of Philautus to deliuer it, vnder the pretence of asking some question, or the vnderstanding of some word.

Philautus attending houely the successe of his loue, made his repaire according to his accustomed vse, and finding the Gentlewomen sitting in an Arbour, saluted them curteously, not forgetting to be inquisitiue how Camilla was eased by his Poingranat, which oftentimes asking of her, she answered him thus.

In faith Philautus, it had a faire coate, but a rotten kernel, which so much offended my weake stomacke, that the very sight caused me to loath it, and the sent to throw it into the fire.

I am sozie, quoth Philautus, (who spake no lesse then truth) that the medicine could not worke that which my minde wished; and with that stood as one in a traunce: which Camilla perceiuing, thought best to rub no more on the gall, lest the standers by should espie where Philautus shew wrong him.

Well, said Camilla, let it goe, I must impute it to my ill fortune, that where I looked for restority, I found a consumption: and with that shee drew out her Petrарke, requesting him to conster her a lesson, hoping his learning would be better for a Scholemaster, then his lucke for a Physitian. Thus walking in the Alley, shee listened to his construction, who turning the Booke, found where the Letter was inclosed, and dissembling that he suspected, hee said he would keepe her Petrарke vntill the morning: doe you quoth Camilla.

With that the Gentlewomen clustered about them both, either to heare how cunning Philautus could conster, or how readily Camilla could conceine. It fell out, that they turned to such a place as turned them al to a blanck, where it was reasoned, whether loue came at the sudden view of beauty, or by long experience of vertue: a long disputation was like to ensue; had not Camilla cut it off before they could ioine issue, as one not willing in the company of Philautus, either to talke of loue, or thinke of loue: lest either hee should

17049

Euphues and his England.

should suspect she had bene wooed, or might bee wonne, which was not done so closely, but it was perceiued of Philautus, though dissembled.

Thus after many words, they went to their dinner, where I omit their Table-talk, lest I lose mine.

After their repast, Surius, came in with a great traine, which lightened Camillas hart, and was a dagger to Philautus breast, who tarried no longer then he had leisure to take his leaue, either desirous to read his Ladies answer, or not willing to enioy Surius his company, whom also I will now forsake, and follow Philautus, to heare how his mind is quieted with Camillas curtesie. Philautus no sooner entered his Chamber, but hee read her Letter, which wrought such skirmishes in his minde, that hee had almost forgot reason, falling into the oldaine of his rage in this manner. Ah cruell Camilla, and accursed Philautus, I see now that it fareth with thee, as it doth with the Harpey, which hauing made one astonished with her faire sight, turneth him into a stone with her venomous saour, and with me as it doth with those that view the Basilisk, whose eies procure delight to the looker at the first glance and death at the second sight.

Is this the courtesie of England towards strangers, to intreat them so despightfully? Is my good will not onely reiected without cause, but also disdained without colour? I, but Philautus praise at thy parting: if shee had not liked thee, she would neuer haue answered thee. Knowest thou not that where they loue much, they dissemble most, that as faire weather commeth after a foule storme so sweet tearmes succed after sower taunts. Alas once againe, Philautus, by Letters to winne her loue, and followe not the vkinde Hound, who leaueth the sent because he is rated: or the bassard Spaniell, which being once rebuked, neuer retriueth his game. Let Atlanta runne neuer so swiftly, she will looke backe vpon Hippomanes: let Medea be as cruell as a fiend to all Gentlemen, shee will at the last respect Iason.

A deniall at the first is accounted a grant, a gentle answer a mockerie. Ladies vse their Louers, as the Storke doth her pong ones, who pricketh them till they bleed with her bill, and then healeth them with her tongue. Cupid himselfe must spend one arrow, and

Euphues and his England.

and thinkest thou to speed with one Letter? No, no, Philautus, hee that locketh to haue cleere water must digge deepe, he that longeth for sweet Musicke, must set his strings at the highest, he that seeketh to win his loue, must stretch his labour and hazard his life. Venus blesseth Lyons in the folde, and Lambes in the Chamber, Eagles at the assault, and Foxes in counsell, so that thou must bee hardy in thy pursuite, and make in victorie, venterous in obtaining, and wise in concealing: so shalt thou win that with praise, which otherwise thou wilt lose with peeuishnes. Faint heart, Philautus, neither winneth Castlenor Ladie: therefore endure all things that shall happen with patience, and pursue with diligence: thy fortune is to be tried, not by the accidents, but by the end.

Thus Gentlewomen, Philautus resembleth the viper, who being stricken with a Rode, lieth as it were dead, but stricken the second time, recovereth his strength. Having his answer at the first in a Pasque, he was almost amazed, and now againe denied, he is animated: presuming thus much vpon the good disposition and kindnesse of Women, that the higher they sit, the lower they looke, and the more they seeme at the first to loath, the more they loue at the last. Whose iudgement as I am not altogether to allow, so can I not in some respect mislike. For in this they resemble the Crocodile, who when one approacheth nere vnto him, gathereth vp himselfe into the roundnes of a Ball, but running from him, stretcheth himselfe into the length of a tree.

The willing resistance of women, was the cause that made Aurelius (whose Arte was onely to drawe Women) to paint Venus Cnydia, catching at the Ball with her hand, which shee seemed to spurne at with her fete. And in this point they are not vnlike vnto the Myre Tree, which being hewen, gathereth in his sappe: but not moued, poureth it out like sirupe. Women are neuer more coy then when they are beloued, yet in their minds neuer lesse constant: seeming to tie themselues to the Mast of the ship with Vlysses, when they are wooed with a strong Cable, which being well discerned, is a twine thred: throwing a stone at the head of him, vnto whom immediatly they cast forth an Apple: of which their gentle nature, Philautus being perswaded, folloved his sute againe in this manner.

17041

Euphues and his England.

Philautus to faire Camilla.

I Cannot tell, Camilla, whether thy ingratitude be greater, or my misfortune: for perusing the few lines thou gavest me, I found as small hope of my loue, as of thy courtesie. But so extreame are the passions of loue, that the more thou seekest to quence them by disdain, the greater flame thou increasest by desire. Not vnlike to Iupiters Well, which extinguissheth a fire brand, and kindleth a wet sticke. And no lesse force hath thy beautie ouer me, then the fire hath ouer Naplycia, which leapeeth into it, wheresoeuer it seeth it.

I am not he Camilla, that will leaue the Rose, because it pricketh my finger, or forsake the Golde that lyeth in the hot fire, for that I burnt my hand, or refuse the sweet Cheshnut, for that it is couered with sharpe huskes. The minde of a faithfull louer, is neither to be daunted with despight, nor affrighted with danger. For as the Loadstone, what windes soeuer blowe, turneth allway to the North: or as Aristotles Quadratus, which way soeuer you turne it, is alwaies constant: so the faith of Philautus is euermore applied to the loue of Camilla; neither to be remoued with any wind, nor rolled with any force. But to my Letter.

Thou saist Greene wounds are to bee dressed roughlie, lest they fester: certaineilie thou speakest like a good Surgion, but dealest like one vnskilfull: for making a great wound, thou puttest in a small tent, cutting the flesh that is sound, before thou cure the place that is sore: striking the veine with a knife, which thou shouldest stop with lint. And so hast thou drawne my Letter (I vse thine owne tearme) that in seeking to spoyle it in my chiane, thou hast spread it ouer my bodie.

Thou addest, thou art no Italian Ladie. I answer, would thou wert: not that I would haue thee wooed as thou saist they are, but that I might winne thee, as thou now art. And yet this I dare say, though not to excuse all, or disgrace thee, that some there are in Italie too wise to be caught with leasings, and too honest to bee intangled with lust, and as warie to eschue sinne, as they are vnwilling to sustaine shame: so that whatsoeuer the most bee, I would not haue thee thinke ill of the best.

Thou allegest thy youth, and allowest thy wisdom: the one,
not

Euphues and his England.

not apt to know the impressions of loue, the other, suspicious not to beleeue them. Truly, Camilla I haue heard, that young is the Goose that will eat no Dates, and a very ill Cocke that will not crow before hee bee olde: and no right Lyon that will not feed on hard meat before hee taste sweet milke: and a tender Virgin, God knows, it must be, that measureth her affections by her age, when as naturally they are inclined (which thou particularly puttest to our Countrie) to play the Brides before they bee able to dresse their heades. Many similitudes thou bringest in to excuse youth, thy twig, thy cozne, thy fruit, thy grape, and I know not what, which are as easie to be refelled, as they are to be repeated. But my good Camilla, I am as vnwilling to confute any thing thou speakest, as I am thou shouldst vtter it, insonmuch as I would sweare the Crow were white, if thou shouldst but say it.

My good will is greater than I can expresse, and thy courtesie lesse than I deserue: thy counsell to expell it with time and reason, is of so little force, that I haue neither the will to vse the meane, nor the wit to conceiue it. But this I say, that nothing can breake off my loue but death: nor any thing hasten my death but thy discourtessie. And so I attend thy finall sentence, and my fatall destinie.

Thine euer, though he be
neuer thine, Philautus.

This Letter hee thought by no meanes better to be conueyed, then in the same booke hee receiued hers. So omitting no time, lest the Iron should coole before he could strike, he presently went to Camilla, whom he found in gathering of flowers, with diuers other Ladies and Gentlewomen, which came as well to recreate themselves for pleasure, as to visit Camilla, whom they all loued. Philautus, somewhat boldned by acquaintance, courteous by nature, and Courtlie by courtenance, saluted them all with such tearmes as he thought meete for their personages, not forgetting to call Camilla his scholer, when shee had schooled him being her Master.

One of the Ladies who delighted much in mirth, seeing Philautus behold Camilla so stedfastly, said vnto him: Gentleman, what flower like you best in all this border? Here be faire Roses, sweete Violets, fragrant Primroses: heere will bee Gilly-flowers, Carna-

Euphues and his England.

tions, Sops in wine, Sweet Johns, and what may either please you for sight, or delight you with savour : loth we are you should haue a possie of all, yet willing to giue you one ; not that which shall looke best, but such a one as you shall like best.

Philautus omitting no opportunity that might either manifest his affection, or commend his wit ; answered her thus.

Lady, of so many sweet flowers, to chouse the best, it is hard, seeing they be all so good : if I should preferre the fairest before the sweetest, you would happily imagine, that either I were stopped in the nose, or wanton in the eies : if the sweetenes, before the beautie, then would you guesse me either to liue with savour, or to haue no iudgement in colours : but to tell my mind (vpon correction be it spoken) of all flowers I loue a faire woman.

Andeed quoth Flauia, (for so was she named) faire women are set thicke, but they come vp thin, and when they begin to bud, they are gathered as though they were blowne, of such men as you are, Gentleman, who thinke greene grasse will neuer be dry Hay : but when the flower of their youth (being slipped too yong) shall fade before they be old, then I dare say, you would change your faire flower for a weede, and the woman you loued then, for the worst violet you refuse now.

Lady, answered Philautus, it is a signe that beauty was no nigard of her slips in this Garden, & very enuious to other grounds, seeing here are so many in one plot, as I shall neuer find more in all Italie ; whether the reason be the heate which killeth them, or the countrey that cannot beare them. As for pulling them vp soone : in that wee shew the desire wee haue vnto them, not the malice. Where you coniecture, that men haue no respect to things when they be old, I cannot but consent to your saying : for well doe you know, that it fareth with women as it doth with the mulberie tree, which the elder it is, the yonger it seemeth, and therefore hath it growne to a Proverb in Italy, when one seeth a Woman stricken in age to looke amiable, he saith, she hath eaten a Snake : so that I must of force follow mine old opinion, that I loue fresh colozs well, but faire women better.

Flauia would not so leaue him, but thus replied to him. You are very amorous, Gentleman, otherwise you would not take the defence

Euphues and his England.

sence of that thing which most men contemne, and women wil not confesse. For whereas you goe about to curry fauour, you make a fault either in praising vs to much, which wee account in England flattery; or pleasing your selfe in your owne minde, which wisemen esteeme as folly. For when you endeouour to proue that women, the elder they are the fairer they looke, you thinke them either very credulous to beleue, or your talke very effectuall to perswade. But as cunning as you are in your Pater noster, I will be bold to adde one Article more to your Creaede: that is, you may seeke in matters of loue what you will; but Women will beleene what they list, and in extolling their beauties, they giue more credit to their owne glasses then mens gloses: but you haue not yet answered my request touching that flower you most desire: for women doe not resemble flowers nether in shew nor saour.

Philautus, not shrinking for an Aprill showre, followed the chase in this manner. Lady, I neither flatter you, nor please my selfe, (although it pleaseth you so to coniecture) for I haue alwaies obserued this, that to stand too much in mine owne conceite, would gaine mee but little, and to claw those of whom I sought for no benefite, would profit me lesse: yet was I neuer so ill brought by, but that I could when time and place should serue, giue euery one their iust commendation, vlesse it were among those that were without comparison: offending in nothing but in this, that being too curious in praising my Lady, I am like to the Painter Protogenes, who could neuer leaue when his worke was well, which fault was to be excused in him, because hee would make it better, and may be borne in mee, for that I wish it excellent.

Touthing your first demand, which you seeme againe to vrg in your last discourse, I say of all flowers I loue the Rose best, yet with this condition, because I will not eate my word, I like a faire Lady well. When quoth Flavia, since you will needs ioine the flower with the woman, among all vs (and speake not partially) call her your Rose that you most regard: and if she deny that name, we will enioine her a pennance for her pride, and reward you with a violet for your paines.

Philautus being driuen to his shift, wished himselfe in his chamber: for this he thought, that if he should choose Camilla, she would

17049

Euphues and his England.

not accept it: if another, shee may iustly reiect him. If hee should discover his loue, then would Camilla thinke him not to be secret, if conceale it, not to be secret: besides, all the Ladies would espy his loue, and preuent it, or Camilla despise his offer, and not regard it. While he was thus in a deepe meditation, Flauia awakened him, saying: Why Gentleman, are you in a dreame, or is there none here worthy to make your choise of, or are wee all so indifferent, that there is neuer a god?

Philautus seeing this Ladie so courteous, and louing Camilla so earnestlie, could not yet resolue himselfe what to doe: but at the last, Loue, which neuer regardeth what it speaketh, nor where, replied thus at all aduentures. Ladies and Gentlewomen, would I were so fortunate that I might choise euery one of you for a flower, and then would I bololy affirme, that I could shew the fairest posie in the world: but folly it is for me to wish that, being a slaue, which none can hope for: that is an Emperour: If I make my choise, I shall speed so well as he that enioyeth all Europe. And with that, gathering a Rose, he gaue it to Camilla, whose colour so increased, as one would haue iudged all her face to haue bene a Rose, had it not bene stained with a naturall whitenesse, which made her to excell the Rose.

Camilla with a smiling countenance, as though nothing grieved, yet bered inwardly to the heart, refused the gift flatly, pretending a ready excuse: which was, that Philautus was either very much ouersene, to take her befoze the Lady Flauia, or else disposed to giue her a mocke aboute the rest in the company.

Well, quoth Flauia to Philautus, (who now stood like one that had bene besmired) there is no harme done, for I perceiue Camilla is otherwise sped: and if I be not much deceiued, shee is a flower for Surius wearing: the penance shee shall haue is to make you a Rose-gay, which she shall not denie, vnlesse she desire vs, and the reward you shall haue, is this, while you tarry in England, my Pièce shall be your Violet.

This Ladies Cousin was named Fraunces, a faire Gentlewoman, and a wise, young, and of very good conditions, not much inferiour to Camilla, equall she could not be.

Camilla, who was loth to bee accounted in any company coy, en-
deuoured

Euphues and his England.

deuoured in the presence of the Ladie Flauia, to be very courteous, and gathered for Philautus a posie of all the finest flowers in the Garden, saying thus vnto him : I hope you will not bee offended, Philautus, in that I could not be your Rose, but impute the fault rather to destinie then discourtesie.

Philautus plucking vp his spirit, gaue her thanks for her paines, and immediately gathered a Violet, which hee gaue mistres Fraunces, which she courteously receiued : thus all parts were pleased for that time.

Philautus was inuited to dinner, so that he could no longer stay, but pulling out the booke wherein his Letter was inclosed, hee deliuered it to Camilla, taking his humble leaue of the Ladie Flauia, and the rest of the Gentlewomen. When he was gone, there fell much talke of him betwene the Gentlewomen, one commending his wit, another his personage, some his fauour, other his good conditions : insomuch that the Ladie Flauia bound it with an oth, that she thought him both wise and honest.

When the company was dissolued, Camilla, not thinking to receiue an answer, but a Lecture, went to her Italian Booke, where she found the Letter of Philautus, who without any further aduise, as one very much offended, or in a great heate, sent him this bone to gnaw on.

To Philautus.

Sufficed it not thee, Philautus, to bewray thy follies, and moue my patience, but thou must also procure in mee a minde to reuenge, and to thy selfe the meanes of a farther perill : Where didst thou learne, that being forbidden to be bolde, thou shouldest growe impudent : Or being suffered to bee familiar, thou shouldest waxe haile fellow : But to so malepert boldnesse is the demeanour of yong Gentlemen come, that where they haue bene once welcomed for courtesie, they thinke themselves worthy to court any Lady by custome : wherein they imagine they vse singular audacitie, which we can no otherwise fearme then saucinesse, thinking women are to be dyssuade by their coined and counterfeit conceits, as the straw is by the Amber, or the Iron by the Load-stone, or the golde by the minerall Chrysocolle.

But as there is no Serpent that can breed in the Box-tree for the

17041

Euphues and his England.

the hardnes, or will build in the Cypresse tree for the bitternes, so there is no fond or poisoned Louer that shall enter into my heart, which is hardened like the Adamant, nor take delight in my words, which shall be more bitter then gall.

It fareth with thee Philaurus as with the Drone, who hauing lost his owne wings seeks to spoile the Bees of theirs, and thou being clipped of thy libertie, goest about to bereaue mee of mine: not far differing from the nature of Dragons, who sucking blood out of the Elephant, kill him, and with the same, poison themselues. And it may bee, that by the same meanes that thou take in hand to inueigle my minde, thou intrap thine owne: a iust reward for so vniust dealing, and a fit reuenge for so vnkind a regard.

But I trust thy purpose shall take no place, and that thy malice shall want might, wherein thou shalt resemble the Serpent Prophirus, who is full of poison, but being toothlesse, hee hurteth none but himselfe: and I doubt not but thy minde is as full of deceit as thy words are of flatterie, but hauing no teeth to bite, I haue no cause to feare. I had not thought to haue vsed so sower words, but where a wand cannot rule the Horse, a spurre must. When gentle Medicines haue no force to purge, we must vse bitter potion, and where the soze is neither to bee dissolued by plaister, nor to be broken, it is requisite it should be launced.

Herbes that are the worse for watering, are to bee rooted out: Trees that are lesse fruitfull for the lopping, are to bee hewen downe: Halukes that ware haggard by manning, are to bee cast off: and fond louers that increase in their follies when they be reiected, are to be despised.

But as to be without haire among the Mycannions, is accounted no shame, because they be all bozne bald, so in Italie to liue in loue is thought no fault, for that there they are al giuen to lust, which maketh thee to coniecture, that wee in England reckon loue to bee the chiefeest vertue, which we abhorre as the greatestt vice: which groweth like the Iuiue about the trees, and killeth them by culling them. Thou art alwaies talking of loue, and applying both thy wit and thy wealth in that idle trade, onely for that thou thinkest thy selfe amiable: not vnlike to the Hedgehog, who euer more lodgeth amongst thornes, because he himselfe is full of prickles.

But

Euphues and his England.

But take this both for a warning and an answer, that if thou prosecute thy suite, thou shalt but undo thy selfe, for I am neither to be wooed with thy passions, whilst thou livest, nor to repent mee of my rigour when thou art dead: which I would not haue thee thinke to proceed of any hate I beare thee, for I malice none, but for loue to mine honour, which neither Italian shall violate, nor Englishman diminish. For as the precious stone Calazias, being throwne into the fire, keepeth still his coldnesse, not to be warmed with any heate: so my heart, although dinted at with the arrowes of thy burning affections, and as it were enuironed with the fire of thy loue, shall alwaies keepe his hardnesse, and be so farre from being mollified, that thou shalt not perceiue it moued. The Violet, Lady Flauia bestowed on thee, I wish thee, and if thou like it I will further thee: otherwise, if thou persist in thy old follies, whereby to increase thy new griefes, I will neuer come where thou art, nor shalt thou haue access to the place where I am. For as little agreement shall there be betwene vs, as is betwene the Vine and the Cabbish; the Dake and the Oliue-tree; the Serpent and the Ashtree; the yron and Theamides.

And if euer thou diddest loue mee, manifest it in this, that heereafter thou neuer write to me: so shall I both bee perswaded of thy faith, and eased of mine owne feare. But if thou attempt againe to wring water out of the Domnice, thou shalt but bewray thy falshood, and augment thy shame, and my seuerity. For this I sweare, by her whose lights can neuer die, Vesta, and by her whose heestes are not to be broken, Diana, that I will neuer consent to loue him, whose sight (if I may so say with modesty) is more bitter vnto me then death.

If this answer will not content thee, I will shew thy Letters, disclose thy loue, and make thee ashamed, to undertake that which thou canst neuer bring to passe. And so I end, thine, if thou leaue to be mine.

Camilla.

Camilla dispatched this Letter with speed, and sent it to Philautus, by her man: which Philautus hauing read, I omit the plight he was in, to the consideration of you Gentlemen, that haue bene in the like: he tar

¶

of

But

17049

Euphues and his England:

of a Lover to the pangs of sciencie: but at the last, calling his wit to him, forgetting both the charge Camilla gave him, and the contents of her Letter, he greeted her immediatly againe with an answer by her owne messenger, in this manner.

To the cruell Camilla, greeting.

If I were as far in thy booke to be beloved, as thou art in mine to be beloved, thou shouldest either soone be made a wife, or ever remaine a Virgine: the one would rid me of hope, the other acquite me of feare. But seeing there wanteth wit in me to perswade, and wil in thee to consent, I meane to manifest the beginning of my loue by the end of my life; the affects of the one shall appeare by the effects of the other.

When as neither sollemne oath, nor sound perswasion, nor any reason can worke in thee a remorse, I meane by death to shew my desire: the which the sooner it commeth, the sweeter it shall be: and the shortnesse of the force, shall abate the sharpnesse of the sorrow. I cannot tell whether thou laugh at my folly, or lament my frenzy: but this I say, and with salt teares trickling downe my cheekes I sweare, that thou never foundest more pleasure in reiecting my loue, then thou shalt finde paine in rememb'ring my losse; and as bitter shall life be to thee, as death to me; and as sorrowfull shall my friends be to see thee prosper, as thine glad to see me perish.

Thou thinkest all I write, of course, and makest all I speake of small account: but God who reuengeth the perjuries of dissemblers, is witnesse of my truth, of whom I desire no longer to liue, then I meane simply to loue.

I will not vse many words, for if thou be wise, few are sufficient: if froward, superfluous: one line is enough if thou be curteous, one word to much, if thou be cruell. Yet this I adde, and that in bitterness of soule, that neither my hand dareth write that which my hart intendeth, nor my tongue vtter that which my hand shall execute. And so farewell, vnto whom onely I wish well.

Thine euer, though shortly
neuer, Philautus.

This Letter being written in the extremity of his rage, he sent it by him that brought hers. Camilla perceiuing a fresh reply, was not

Euphues and his England.

not a little melancholie, but digesting it with company, and burning the Letter, shee determined neuer to write to him, nor after that to see him, so resolute was shee in her opinion: I dare not say obstinate, lest you Gentlewomen should take pepper in the nose, when I put but salt to your mouthes. But this I dare boldly asseirme, that Ladies are to bee loved with Apelles Pensill, Orpheus Harpe, Mercuries tongue, Adonis beautie, Croesus wealth; or else neuer be wonne: for their beauties being blazed, their eares tickled, their mindes moued, their sies pleased, their appetite satisfied, their Coffers filled; when they haue all things they should haue, and would haue: then men need not to stand in doubt of their coming, but of their constancie.

But let mee follow Philautus, who now both loathing his life, and cursing his luck, called to remembrance his old friend Euphues, whom hee was wont to haue alwaies in mirth a pleasant companion: in griefe a comforter: in all his life the onelie stay of his libertie: the discourtesie which he offered him so increased his griefe, that he fell into these tearmes of rage, as one either in an extasie, or in a lunacie.

Now, Philautus, dispute no more with thy selfe of thy loue, but be desperate to end thy life: thou hast cast off thy friend, and thy Lady hath forsaken thee: thou destitute of both, canst neither haue comfort of Camilla, whom thou seest obstinate, nor counsell of Euphues, whom thou hast made enuious.

Ah my good friend Euphues, I see now at length, though too late, that a true friend is of more price then a kingdome, and that thy faith is to be preferred before the beautie of Camilla. For as safe being it is in the companie of a trustie mate, as sleeping in the grasse Trifoile, where ther is no Serpent so venemous that dare venture.

Thou wast ever carefull for my estate, and I carelesse for thine: thou didst alwaies feare in me the fire of loue, I ever flattered my selfe with the bridle of wisdom: when thou wast earnest to giue me counsell, I waxed angry to beare it: if thou didst suspect mee vpon iust cause, I fell out with thee for euery light occasion: now Euphues, I see what it is to want a friend, and what it is to lose one: thy words are come to passe which once I thought thou spakest in sport, but now I finde them as a prophetic, that I should be
constrained

17041

Euphues and his England.

constrained to stand at Euphues doze as the true owner.

What shall I doe in this extremity? Which way shall I turne mee? Of whom shall I seeke remedy? Euphues will reiect me, and why should he not? Camilla hath reiected me, and why should shee? The one I haue offended with too much griefe, the other I haue serued with too great good will: the one is lost with loue, the other with hate: he for that I cared not for him, she because I cared for her. I, but though Camilla be not to be moued, Euphues may bee mollified. Tria him Philautus, sue to him, make friends, write to him, leaue nothing vndone that may either shew in thee a sorrowfull heart, or moue in him a pittifull minde. Thou knowest he is of nature courteous, one that hateth none, that loueth thee, that is tractable in all things. Lions spare those that couch to them, the Tigresse biteth not when she is clawed. Cerberus barketh not if Orpheus pipe sweetly: assure thy selfe that if thou be penitent, he will be pleased, and the old friendship will be better then the new.

Thus Philautus ioying now in nothing but onely in the hope he had to recouer the friendship with repentance, which he had broken off by rashnes, determined to greet his freind Euphues, who all this while lost no time at his booke in London: but how he imploied it, he shal himselfe vtter, for that I am neither of his counsell nor Court, but what he hath done, he will not conceale, for rather hee wished to bewray his ignorance then his idlenesse: and willinger you shall finde him to make excuse of rudenesse then lasinesse. But thus Philautus saluted him.

Philautus to Euphues.

The sharpe Northeast wind (my good Euphues) doth neuer last three daies: tempests haue but a short time, and the more violent the thunder is, the lesse permanent it is. In the like maner it falleth out with iarres and crossings of friends, which begun in a minut, are ended in a moment.

Necessarie it is, that amongst friendes there should be some ouerthwarting, but to continue in anger, not conuenient. The Camell first troubleth the water before he drinke: the frankinsence is burned before it smell: friends are tried before they bee trusted: Lest shining like the Carbuncle as though they had fire, they bee found, being

Euphues and his England.

being touched, to be without fire. Friendship should bee like the Wine, which Homer much commending calleth Maronium, where of one pint being mingled with five quarts of water, yet it keepeth his old strength and vertue, not to bee qualified by any discurtisie. Where Salt doth growe nothing else can bꝛed, where friendship is built, no offence can harbour.

Then Euphues, let the falling out of friends bee the renning of affection, that in this wee may resemble the bones of the Lion, which lying still and not moued, begin to rot, but being stricken one against another, bꝛeake out like fire, and ware græne. The anger of friends is not vnlike vnto the Physitions Cucurbitæ, which drawing all the infection in the body into one place, doth purge all the diseases: and the iarres of friends, ripping vp all the hidden malice, or suspicions, or follies that lie lurking in the minde, maketh the knot moze durable. For as the bodie being purged of melancholie, wareth light and apt to all labour: so the mind as it were scoured of mistrust, becommeth fit euer after for belæse. But why doe I not confesse that which I haue committed, or knowing my selfe guiltie, why vse I to glose?

I haue vniustlie (my good Euphues) picked a quarrell against thee: forgetting the counsell thou gauest mee, and despising that which I now desire. Which as often as I call to my minde, I can not but blush to my selfe for shame, and fall out with my selfe for anger. For in falling out with thee, I haue done no otherwise, then he that desiring to saile safely, killeth him at the helme: resembling him that hauing neede to alight, spurceth his horse to make him stand still: or him that swimming vpon anothers backe, seeketh to stop his bꝛeath. It was in thee, Euphues, that I put all my trust: and yet vpon thee that I powꝛed out all my malice, moze cruell then the Crocodile who suffereth the Birde to bꝛed in her mouth, that scoureth her tooth: and nothing so gentle as the princelie Lyon, who saued his life that helped his foete. But if either thy good nature can forget that which my ill tongue doth repeat, or thy accustomable kindnesse forgive that my vnbridled fury did commit, I will hereafter be as willing to bee thy seruant, as I am now desirous to be thy friend, and as readie to take an iniury as I was to giue an offence.

Euphues and his England.

What I haue done in thy absence, I will certifie at thy coming, and yet I doubt not but thou canst ghesse thereof by my condition, yet thus much I adde, that I am as readie to die as to liue, and were I not animated with the hope of thy good counsell, I would rather haue suffered the death I wish for, then sustaine the shame I sought for.

But now in these extremities, reposing both my life in thy hands, and my vnfaigned seruice and good will for euer hereafter at thy commandement, I attend thine answer, and rest thine to vse more then his owne.

Philautus.

This Letter being ended, Philautus sent the same by his seruant, which Euphues reading, stood as one in a quandarie, not knowing whether he should more reioyce at his friends submission, or mistrust his subtiltie: therefore being as yet not fullie determined to any thing, he presently departed into his chamber, and without further search of Philautus well meaning, sent him an answer by his owne messenger, in manner as hereafter followeth.

Euphues to him that was his Philautus.

I haue receiued thy Letter, and know the man: I red it, and perceiued the matter, which I am as far from knowing how to answer, as I was from looking for such an errand. Thou beginnest to infer a necessitie, that friends should fall out, when I cannot allowe an inconuenience. For if it bee among such as are faithfull, there should be no cause of breach: if betwene dissemblers, no care of reconciliation.

The Camell saist thou, loneth water when it is troubled, and I say, the Hart thirsteth for the cleere streame: and fitly diddest thou bring it in against thy selfe (though applied it I know not how aptly for thy selfe) for such friendship dost thou like where braules may be stirred, not quietnes sought.

The Wine Maroneum which thou commendest, and the Salt ground which thou inferrest, the one is neither fit for thy drinking, nor the other for thy taste: for such strong Wines will overcome such light wits, and so good Salt cannot relish in so vnauorize a mouth, neither as thou desirest to apply them, can they stand thee in
Dead.

Euphues and his England.

head. For oftentimes I haue found much water in thy deades, but not one drop of such wine: and the ground where Salt should grow, but neuer one coyne that had saour.

After many reasons to conclude that iarres were requisite, thou fallest to a kind of submission, which I maruell at. For if I gaue no cause, why didst thou pick a quarell: if any, why shouldst thou craue pardon? If thou canst defie thy best friend, what wilt thou doe to thine ennemie? Certainly this must needes ensue, that if thou canst not be constant to thy friend, when hee doth thee good, thou wilt neuer beare with him when he shall doe thee harine: thou that seekest to spill the blood of the innocent, canst shew small mercy to an offender: thou that treadest a woyme on the taile, wilt crush a waspe on the head: thou that art angry for no cause, wilt, I thinke, run mad for a light occasion.

Truely Philautus, that once I loued thee I cannot deny: that now I should againe do so, I refuse: for small confidence shall I repose in thee, when I am guilty, that can find no refuge in innocency.

The malice of a friend is like the sting of an Aspe, which nothing can remedy: but being pierced in the hand, it must bee cut off: and a friend thrust to the heart it must be pulled out. I had as leaue, Philautus, haue a wound that inwardly might lightly grieue mee, as a scare that outwardly should greatly shame me. In that thou seemest so earnest to craue attonement, thou causett me the more to suspect thy truth: for either thou art compelled by necessity, and then it is not worth thanks, or else disposed againe to abuse me, and then it deserveth reuenge. Geles cannot be held in a wet hand, yet are they staid with a bitter Fig leafe. The Lamprey is not to be killed with a cuggell, yet is she spoiled with a Cane: so friends, that are so slippery and waueing in all their dealings, are not to be kept with faire and smooth talke, but with rough and sharpe taunts: and contrariwise, those which with blowes are not to be reformed, are oftentimes wooen with light perswasions.

Which way I should vse thee, I know not, for now a shap sword moued thee, when otherwhiles a sword will not; then a friendly checke killeth thee, when a Rasor cannot raze thee. But to conclude, Philautus, it fareth with mee now, as with those that haue bene once bitten with the Scorpion, who neuer after feeleth any sting

Euphues and his England.

King either of the Waspe or the Hoziet, or the Bee : for I hauing
 bene pricked with thy falsehood, shal neuer I hope againe be touch-
 ed with any other dissembler, flatterer, or fickle friend. Touching
 thy life in my absence, I feare me it hath bene too loose : but seeing
 my counsell is no more welcome vnto thee, then water into a Ship,
 I will not waste winde to instruct him that wasteth himselfe to de-
 stroy others. Yet if I were as fully perswaded of thy conuersion,
 as thou wouldest haue mee of thy confession, I might happily doe
 that, which now I will not. And so farewell Philautus: and though
 thou litle esteeme my counsell, yet haue respect to thine owne credit:
 so in working thine owne good, thou shalt keepe me from harme.

Thine once, Euphues.

This Letter pinched Philautus at the first, yet trusting much to
 the good disposition of Euphues, he determined to perseuere both in
 his sute and amendment, and therfore as one beating his yron, that
 he might frame it while it were hot, answered him in this manner.

To mine onely friend, Euphues.

There is no bone so hard, but being laid in vinegar, it may bee
 wrought: no Iron so tough, but seasoned with Zutho, it may
 be ingrauen : no Bore so knottie, that dipped in Dile, cannot bee
 carued : and can there bee a heart in Euphues, which neither will
 yeeld to softnesse with gentle perswasions, or true perseuerance :
 What canst thou require at my hand, that I will deny thee : Haue
 I broaken the league of frindship : I confesse it. Haue I misued
 thee in tearmes : I will not deny it. But being sorrowfull for either,
 why shouldest not thou forgive both :

Water is praised, for that it sanoureth of nothing : fire for that it
 yeeldeth to nothing : and such should the nature of a true friend bee,
 that it should not saour of any rigour : and such the effect, that it
 may not be conquered with any offence : otherwise faith put into
 the breaſt that beareth grudges, or contracted with him that can re-
 member griefes, is not vnlike Wine poured into Firre vessels,
 which is present death to the Drinker.

Friends must be vsed, as the Musitions tune their stringes, who
 finding them in disoord, doe not breake them, but either by inten-
 tion

Euphues and his England.

tion of remission, frame them to a pleasant content: as riders handle their yong colts, who finding them wild and vnttractable, bring them to a good pace, with a gentle raine, not with a sharp spur: as the Scythians ruled their slaues, not with cruell weapons, but with the shew of small whips.

Then, Euphues, consider with thy selfe what I may be, not what I haue been; and forsake me not for that I deceiue thee: if thou do, thy discourtesie will breed my destruction. For as there is no beast that toucheth the hearbe whereon the Beare hath breathed: so there is no man that will come neere him, vpon whom the suspicion of deceit is fastened. Concerning my life passed, I conceale it, though to thee I meane hereafter to confesse it: yet hath it not been so wicked, that thou shouldest be shamed, though so infortunate that I am greeued. Consider wee are in England, where our demeanour will be narrowly marked if we tread awry, and our follies mocked if we vse wrangling. I thinke thou art willing that no such thing should happen, and I know thou art wise to preuent it.

I was of late in the company of diuers Gentlewomen, among whom Camilla was present, who marvelled not a little, that thou soughtest either to absente thy selfe of some conceiued iniurie, where there was none giuen: or of set purpose, because thou wouldest giue one. I thinke it requisite, as well to auoid the suspicion of malice, as to shun the note of ingratitude, that thou repaire thither, both to purge thy selfe of the opinion may be conceiued, and to giue thanks for the benefits receiued. Thus assuring my selfe thou wilt answer my expectation, and renewe our old amity: I end, thine assured to command.

Philautus.

Philautus did not sleepe about his businesse, but presently sent his Letter, thinking that if once he could fasten friendship againe vpon Euphues, that by this meanes he should compasse his loue with Camilla: and yet this I durst affirme, that Philautus was both willing to haue Euphues, and sorrowfull that hee lost him by his owne lauishnes.

Euphues perused this Letter oftentimes, being in a mannering what to answer: at the last, hee determined once againe to lie a looke, thinking that if Philautus meant faithfully, hee would not de-

Euphues and his England.

first from his sute & therefore he returned salutation in this maner.

Euphues to Philautus.

There is an hearb in India, Philautus, of pleasant smell, but who so cometh to it, feeleth present smart, for that there breed in it a number of small Serpents. And it may be, that though thy Letter bee full of sweet words, there breed in thy heart many bitter thoughts: so that in giuing credit to thy Letters, I may be deceived with thy leasing.

The Bore-tree is alwaies greene, but the seede is poison: It hath a sweet rinde and a pleasant leafe, but the fruit so bitter, that no beast will bite it: a dissembler hath euermore Honny in his mouth, and gall in his minde, which maketh mee to suspect their wiles, though I cannot euer preuent them.

Thou settest downe the office of a friend, which if thou couldest as well performe, as thou canst describe, I would be as willing to confirme our old league, as I am to beleue thy new lawes. Water that sauoureth nothing (as thou saiest) may be heated, and scald thee: and fire which yeldeth to nothing, may bee quenched when thou wouldest warme thee. So the friend in whom there was no intent to offend, may through the sinister dealings of his fellow, be turned to heate being before cold, and the faith which wrought like a flame in him, be quenched and haue no sparke.

The pouring of wine into fire vessels, serueth thee to no purpose: for if it be good Wine, there is no man so foolish to put it into fire: if bad, who would powre it into better then fire? Mustie Casks are fit for rotten Grapes, a barrell of poisoned Iuy is good inough for a Tun of stinking Pile, and crueltie too mild a medicine for craft.

How Musicians tune their Instruments I know, but how a man should temper his friend I cannot tell, yet oftentimes the string breaketh, that the Musition seeketh to tune, and the friend cracketh which good counsell should tame: such Colts are to bee ridden with a sharpe snaffle, not with a pleasant bit, and litle will the Scythian whip be regarded, where the sharpnesse of the sword is derided. If thy lucke haue been infortunante, it is a signe thy liuing hath not been godly: for commonly there cometh an ill end, where

Euphues and his England.

Where there was a naughtie beginning.

But leatne Philautus to liue hereafter, as though thou shouldest not liue at all, bee constant to them that trust thee, and trust them that thou hast tried: dissemble not with thy friend, either for feare to displease him, or for malice to deceiue him: know this, that the best simples are very simple, if the Physition could not apply them: that precious stones were no better then pebbles, if Lapidaries did not know them, and the best friend is worse then a foe, if a man doe not vse him.

Whithride must bee taken inwardly, not spread in playsters: Purgations must bee vsed like drinke, not like baths: the counsell of a friend must be fastned to the minde, not the eare; followed, not praised, imployed in good lining, not talked of in good meaning. I know, Philautus, wee are in England, but I would wee were not, not that the place is too base, but that we are too bad, & God grant thou haue done nothing which may turne thee to discredit, or mee to displeasure. Thou saist thou wert of late with Camilla, I feare me too late, & yet perhaps too soone: I haue alwaies told thee, that she was too high for thee to climb, and too faire for others to catch, and too vertuous for any to inueigle. But wild horses breake high hedges, though they cannot leape ouer them: eager Volues barke at the Boone, though they cannot reach it; and Mercury whistleth for Vesta, though he cannot win her.

For absenting my selfe, I hope they can take no cause of offence: neither, that I know, haue I giuen any. I loue not to be bold, yet would I bee welcome: but guestes and filh, say wee in Athens, are euer stale within thre daies: shortly I will visit them and excuse my selfe; in the meane season I thinke so well of them, as is possible for a man to thinke of women, and how well that is, I appeale to thee, who alwaies madeest them no worse then Saints in heaven, and shrines in no worse place then thy heart.

For answering thy sute, I am not yet so hastie: for accepting thy seruice, I am not so imperious: for in friendship there must bee an equalitie of estates, and that may be in vs: also a similitude of diuers manners, and cannot vlesse thou learne a new lesson, and leaue the old, vntill which time I leaue thee, wishing thee well as to my selfe.

Euphues.

Euphues and his England.

This Letter was written in hast, sent with speed, and answered againe in post. For Philautus seeing so good counsell could not proceede of an ill conceit, thought once againe to solicit his friend, and that in such tearmes as be most agreeable to Euphues time. In this manner.

To Euphues, health in body, and quietnesse
in minde.

If Musicke there are many discords, before there can be framed a Diapason: and in contracting of good will, many iarres before there be established a friendship, and by this meanes the Musick is more sweet, and the amitie more sound. I haue receiued thy Letter, wherein there is as much good counsell contained, as either I would wish, or thou thy selfe couldest giue: but euer thou harpest on that string which long since was out of tune, but now is broken by inconstancie.

Certes my good Euphues, as I cannot but commend thy wisdom in making a stay of reconciliation (for that thou findest so little stay in me) so can I not but maruell at thy incredulitie in not believing me, since that thou seest a reformation in me. But it may be thou dealest with me, as the Philosopher doth with his knife, who being many yeares in making of it, alwaies dealing by the obseruation of the stars, caused it at the last to cut the hard whetstone: saying, that it skilleth not how long things were a doing, but how well they were done. And thou holdest me off with many delaies, vsing I know not what obseruations, thinking thereby to make mee a friend at last, that shall last: I praise thy good meaning, I mislike thy rigour. Be thou shalt vse in what thou wilt, and doe that with a slender twist, that none can doe with a tough With. As for my being with Camilla, good Euphues rub there no more, lest I winch, for deny I will not that I haue wzung on the withers. This one thing touching my selfe I say, and before him that seeth all things I sweare, that heereafter I will neither dissemble nor delude thee, nor picke quarrels to fall out with thee, thou shalt finde me constant to one, faithlesse to none, in prayer deuout, in manners reformed, in life chaste, in words modest: not framing my fancie to the humour of loue, but my deedes to the rule

Euphues and his England.

rule of zeale : And such a one as heretofore merrilie thou saidst I was, but now truly thou shalt see I am, and as I know thou art.

Then Euphues, appoint the place where we may meete and reconcile the mindes, which I confesse by mine owne follies were seuered. And if euer after this I shall seeme iealous ouer thee, or blinded towards my selfe, vse me as I deserue, shamefully. Thus attending thy speedie answer, for that delaies are perilous, especially as my case now standeth, I end, thine euer to vse as his owne.

Philautus.

Euphues seeing such speedy returne of another answer, thought Philautus to be very sharpe set for to recouer him : and weighing with himselfe, that often in marriages there haue fallen out brawls, where the chiefest loue should be, and yet againe reconciliations, that none ought at any time so to loue, that he should find his heart at any time to hate. Furthermore, casting in his minde the good he might doe to Philautus by his friendship, and the mischiefes that might ensue by his fellowes folly, answered him thus againe speedily, as well to preuent the course he might otherwise take, as also to prescribe what way he should take.

Euphues to his friend Philautus.

Nettles, Philautus, haue no prickles, yet they sting, and wordes haue no points, yet thy pearce : though outwardly they protest great amendment, yet oftentimes the softnes of Wooll which the Seres send, sticketh so fast to the skinne, that when one looketh it should keepe him warme, it fetcheth blood : and thy smooth talke, thy sweet promises, may, when I shall thinke to haue them performed to delight me, be a cozassue to destroy me. But I will not cast beyond the Stone, for that in all things I know there must be a meane. Thou swearest now that thy life shall be led by my line, that thou wilt giue no cause of offence by thy disorders, nor take any by good meaning, which if it bee so, I am as willing to be thy friend, as I am to be mine owne.

But this take for a warning, if euer thou iarre when thou shouldest iest, or followe thine owne will, when thou art to heare my counsels, then will I depart from thee, and so display thee as none

17041

Euphues and his England.

that is wise shall trust thee, or any that is honest shall live with thee. I am now resolved by thy Letters, of that which I was almost perswaded of by mine owne coniecture touching Camilla.

Why, Philautus, art thou so mad, without acquaintance of thy part, and familiaritie of hers, to attempt a thing, which will not onely be a disgrace to thee, but also a discredit to her? Thinkest thou thy selfe either worthy to wooe her, or she willing to wedde thee? Either thou able to frame thy tale to her content, or she ready to giue eare to thy conclusions?

No, no, Philautus, thou art too young to wooe in England, though old enough to win in Italic, for here they measure more the man by the qualities of the mind, then the proportion of his body. They are too expert in loue, hauing learned in this time of their long peace, euery wrinkle that is scene or imagined.

It is neither an ill tale well told, nor a good historie made better: neither inuention of new fables, nor the reciting of old, that can either allure in them an appetite in loue, or almost an intention to heare.

It fareth not with them as it doth with those in Italic, who preferre a sharpe wit, before sound wisdom, or a proper man before a perfect mind: they live not by shadows, nor feed of the ayre, nor lust after wind. Their loue is not tied by Art, but reason, not to the precepts of Ouid, but to the perswasions of honestie. But I cannot but maruell at thy audacitie, that thou diddest once dare to mooue her to loue, whom I alwaies feared to solicit in questioning, as well doubting to be grauelled by her quick and ready wit, as to be confuted by her graue and wise answers.

But thou wilt say, she was of no great birth, of meaner parentage then thy selfe: I, but Philautus, they be most noble, who are commended more for their perfection, then their pedigree: and let this suffice thee, that her honour consisted in vertue, beautie, wit, not blood, ancestors, antiquitie. But more of this at our next meeting, where I thinke I shall be merry to heare the discourse of thy madness, for I imagine to my selfe that shee handled thee very hardly, considering both the place she serued in, and the person that serued her. And sure I am, she did not hang for thy mowing.

A Phoenix is no foode for Philautus, that daintie tooth of thine must

Euphues and his England.

must be pulled out, else wilt thou surfeit with desire, and that Eagles
eie picked out, else will it be dazled with delight. My counsell must
rule thy conceit lest thou confound vs both. I wil this euening come
to thy lodging, where we will confer, and till then, I commend me
to thee.

Thine euer to vie, if thou be thine

owne, Euphues.

This Letter was so thankfully receiued of Philautus, that he al-
most ranne beyond himselfe for ioy, preparing all things necessarie
for the entertainment of his friend, who at the houre appointed fail-
ed not.

Many embracings there were, much strange courtesie, many
pretty glaunces, being almost for the time but strangers, because
of their long absense. But growing to questioning one with ano-
ther, they fell to the whole discourse of Philautus loue, who left out
nothing that before I put in, which I must omit, lest I set before
you Coleworts twice sodden, which will both offend your eares,
which I seeke to delight : and trouble my hand, which I couet to
ease.

But this I am sure, that Euphues conclusion was this, between
waking and winking, that our English Ladies and Gentlewomen
were so cunning in loue, that the labour were more easie in Italie to
wed one and burie her, then heere to woe and marrie her. And thus
they with long talking wared weary, where I leaue them, not wil-
ling to talke any longer, but to sleepe their fill till morning.

Now Gentlewomen, I appeale in this controuersie to your
consciencs, whether it breed in you an Arte to loue as Euphues
thinketh, or whether it breed in you as it doth in men : by sight, if
one be beautifull : by hearing if one be witty : by deserts, if one
be conrteous : by desire, if one bee vertuous : which I would not
know to this intent, that I might be instructed how to win any of
you, but to the end I might wonder at you all. For if there bee in
loue an Art, then doe I not maruell to see men that enery way are
to be beloued so often times to be reiected. But so secret is this mat-
ter, pertaining nothing to our sere, I will not farther enquire of
it, lest happily in guessing what Art women vse in loue, I should
minister an Arte they neuer knew before : and so in thinking to
bestoway.

17049

Euphues and his England.

bestow the baite that hath caught me ; I giue them a net to draw many ; putting a sword into the hand, where there is but a sheath, teaching them to stricke, that put vs to our tryings by warding, which would double our perill, who without art cannot allure them : and increase their tyranny, who, without they torment, will come to no barely. But this I admonish you, that as your owne beauties make you not couetous of your almes towards true louers, so other mens flatteries make you not prodigall of your honors towards dissemblers. Let not them that speake fairest be beleued soonest, for true loue lacketh a tongue, and it is tried by the eies, which in a heart that meaneth well, is as far from wanton glances, as the minde is from idle thoughts. And this Art I will giue you, which we men commonly practise: if you behold any one, that either your courtesie hath allured, or your beauty, or both, triumph not ouer him, but the more earnest you see him, the more ready be to follow him, and when he thinketh himselfe nearest, let him be farthest off : then if he take that with patience, assure your selfe he cannot be faithlesse.

He that angleth, plucketh the baite away when he is nere a bite, to the end the fish may be more eager to swallow the hooke. Birds are trained with a sweet call, but caught with a broad net : and louers with faire looks, but are intangled with disdainefull eies.

The Spaniell, that sawneth when he is beaten, will neuer forsake his Master : the man that doteth when hee is disdained, will neuer forgoe his Mistres. But too much of this string, which soundeth too much out of square, and returne to Euphues and Philautus.

The next morning when they were risen, they went into a Gallerie, where Euphues, who perceined Philautus grieuously perplexed for the loue of Camilla, began thus betwene iest and earnest to talk with him.

Philautus, I haue well-nigh all this night bene disputing with my selfe of thy distresse, yet can I resolue my selfe in nothing, that either may content me, or quiet thee. What mettall art thou made off, Philautus, that thinkest of nothing but loue, and are rewarded with nothing lesse then loue? Lucilla was too bad, yet didst thou court her: thy sweet heart, now in Naples, is none of the best, yet

Euphues and his England.

yet didst thou follow her. Camilla exceeding all, where thou wast to haue least hope, thou hast loved, not without great hazard to thy person, and griefe to mine.

I haue perused her Letters, which in my simple iudgement, are so farre from allowing thy suit, that they seeme to loath thy seruice. I will not flatter thee in thy follies, shee is no match for thee, nor thou for her: the one wanting liuing to maintaine a wife, the other birth to aduance a husband. Surias, whom I remember thou diddest name in thy discourse, I remember in the Court, a man of great birth, and noble blood, singular wit, and rare personage, if he go about to get credit, I muse what hope thou couldest conceiue to haue a good countenance?

Well, Philautus, to set downe precepts against thy loue will nothing preuaile: to perswade thee to goe forward, were very perillous: for I know in the one, loue will regard no lawes, and in the other, perswasions can purchase no liberty. Thou art too headie to enter in: where no heed can helpe one out.

Theseus would not goe into the Labirinth without a threed, that might shew him the way out; neither any wise man enter into the crooked corners of loue, vlesse he knew by what meanes he might get out. Loue, which should continue for euer, should not be begun in an houre, but slowly be taken in hand, and by length of time finished: resembling Xeuxis that wise Painter, who in things that hee would haue last long, tooke greatest leisure.

I haue not forgotten one Mistresse Fraunces, which the Lady Flauia gaue thee for a Violet, and by thy description, though she be not equall with Camilla, yet is she fitter for Philautus. If thy humour be such, that nothing can feed it but loue, cast thy minde on her: consider the impossibilitie thou hast to win Camilla, with the likelihood thou maiest haue to enioy thy violet: and in this will I endeavour both my wit and my good will, so that nothing shall want in me that may worke ease in thee. The Violet if she be honest, is worthy of thee beautifull thou saiest shee is, and therfore too worthy: Hot fire is not onely quenched by the cleare fountaine; nor loue onely sanctified by the faire face. Wherefore in this tell me thy minde, that either wee may proceed in that matter, or sake a new medicine. Philautus thus replied.

Euphues and his England.

O my good Euphues, I haue neither the power to forsake mine owne Camilla, nor the heart to deny thy counsell: it is easie to fall into a net, but hard to get out. Notwithstanding I will goe against the haire in all things, so I may please thee in any thing. I my Camilla. With that Euphues staied him, saying.

He that hath soze eies must not behold the Candle, nor hee that would leaue his loue, fall to rememb'ring of his Lady: the one causeth the eie to smart, the other the heart to bleede. Well quoth Philautus, I am content to haue the wound searched, yet vnwilling to haue it cured. But sithens the sicke men are not to prescribe diets, but to keepe them, I am ready to take potions, and if wealth serue, to pay thee for them: yet one thing maketh me to feare, that in running after two Hares, I catch neither. And certainly, quoth Euphues, I know many good Hunters, that take more delight to haue the Hare on foot, and neuer catch it, then to haue no ere, and yet kill in the fourme: whereby I ghesse, there commeth greater delight in the hunting, then in the eating. It may bee, saide Philautus, but I were then very vnfit for such pastimes; for what sport soeuer I haue all the day, I loue to haue the game in my dish at night.

And truly, answered Euphues, you are worse made for a Hound then a Hunter, for you marre your sent with carren, before you start your game, which maketh you hunt oftentimes counter. Whereas if you had kept it pure, you might ere this time haue turned the Hare you winded, and caught the game you coursed. Why then I perceiue, quoth Philautus, that to talke with Gentlewomen touching the discourses of loue: to eat with them, to conferre with them, to laugh with them, is as great pleasure as to enioy them: to the which thou maist by some fallacy diue me, but neuer perswade me: For then were it as pleasant to behold fruit, as to eat them: or to see faire bread, as to taste it. Thou erreest, Philautus, saide Euphues, if thou be not of that minde: for he that commeth into fine Gardens, is as much recreated to smell the flowers, as to gather them. And many we see more delighted with pictures, then desirous to be Painters: the effect of loue is faith, not lust: delightfull conference, not detestable concupisence, which beginneth with folly, and endeth with repentance. For mine owne part I would
with

Euphues and his England.

with nothing, if againe I should fall into that vaine, then to haue the company of her in common conference that I best loued, to heare her sober talke, her wise answeres, behold her sharpe capacitie, and to be periwaded of her constancie: and in these things doe we onely differ from brute beasts, who haue no pleasure but in sensuall appetite. You preach heresie, quoth Philautus, and besides, so repugnant to the text you haue taken, that I am more ready to pull that out of thy Pulpit, then to beleue thy glosses.

I loue the company of women well, yet to haue them in lawfull matrimony, I like much better: if thy reasons should goe as current, then were loue no torment: for hardly doth it fall out with him that is denied the sight and talke of his Lady. Hungry stomacks are not to be fed with sayings against surfetings: nor thirst to bee quenched with sentences against drunkenness. To loue women and neuer inioy them, is as much as to loue wine, and neuer tast it: or to be delighted with faire apparell, and neuer weare it. And idle loue is that, and fit for him that hath nothing but eares, that is satisfied to heare her speake: not desirous to haue himselfe speede. Why then, Euphues, to haue the picture of his Lade, is as much as to inioy her presence, and to read her Letters, of as great force, as to heare her answeres: which if it bee, my suit in loue should be as much to the Painter to draw her with an amiable face, as my Lady to writ an amorous Letter: both which, with little sute being obtained, I may liue with loue and neuer wet my foot, nor breake my sleepes, nor waste my money, nor torment my minde. But this worketh as much delight in the minde of a Louer, as the apples that hang at Tantalus nose, or the riuer that runneth close by his chin. And in one word, it would doe mee no more good to see my Ladie, and not to imbrace her in the heat of my desire, then to see fire, and not to warme me in the extremitie of my colde.

No, no, Euphues, thou makest loue nothing but a continuall wooing if thou barreit of the effect, and then it is infinite: if thou allow it, and yet forbid it a perpetuall warfare, and then is it intolerable. From this opinion no man should with draw mee, that the end of fishing, is catching, not angling: of birding, taking, not whistling: of loue, wedding, not wooing. Otherwise it is no better then hanging. Euphues, smiling to see Philautus so earnest,

17049

Euphues and his England.

bayed him againe in this manner.

Why, Philautus, what harme were in lone, if the heart should yeld his right to the eie, or his fancie his force to the eare? I haue read of many, and some I know, betwene whom there was as feruent affection as might be, that neuer desired any thing but sweet talke, and continuall companie, at banquets, at plaies, and other assemblies, as Phrigius and Pieria, whose constant faith was such, that there was neuer word nor thought of any uncleannesse. Pigmalion loued his Iuoy image, being enamoured onely by the sight: and why should not the chaste loue of others be builded rather in agréeing in heauenlie meditations, then temporall actions? Believe mee Philautus, if thou knewest what it were to loue, thou wouldest bee as far from the opinion thou holdest, as I am. Philautus, thinking no greater absurditie to be held in the world then this, replied before the other could end, as followeth.

Indeed Euphues, if the king would resigne his right to his Legate, then were it not amisse for the heart to yeld to the eies. Thou knowest Euphues, that the eie is the messenger of loue, not the master: the eare a carrier of newes, the heart a digester. Besides this, suppose, one haue neither eares to heare his Ladie speake, nor eies to see her beautie, shall hee not therefore bee subiect to the impressions of loue? If thou answer no, I can allege diuers, both deafe and blind, that haue beene wounded: if thou grant it, then confesse, the heart must haue his hope; which is neither seeing nor hearing: and what is the third?

Touching Phrigius and Pieria, thinke them both fooles in this: for he that keepeth a Hen in his house to cackle, and not lay, or a Cock to crow, and not to tread, is not vnlike vnto him that hauing sown his wheate, neuer reapeth it, or reaping it, neuer thresheth it, taking more pleasure to see faire corne, then to eat fine bread. Pigmalion maketh against this: for Venus seeing him so earnestly to loue, and so effectually to pray, granted him his request, which had he not by importunate sute obtained, I doubt not but he would rather haue helued her in peeces, then honored her with passions, and set her vp in some Temple for an Image, not kept her in his house

Nicholas Dodington.

Euphues and his England.

house for a wife. He that desireth onely to talke and vish without any further suite, is no far different from him, that liketh to see a painted Rose, better then to smell to a perfect Violet, or to heare a bird sing in a bush, rather then haue her at home in his owne cage.

This will I follow, that to plead for loue, and request nothing but looks, and to deserue words, and liue onely by words, is as one should plow his ground, and neuer solve it, grind his colours, and neuer paint, saddle his horse and neuer ride.

As they were thus communing, there came from the Ladie Flauia, a Gentleman, who invited them both that night to supper, which they with humble thanks giuen, promised to doe, and till supper time I leaue them debating their question.

Now Gentlewomen, in this matter I would I knew your minds, and yet I can somewhat ghesse at your meanings: If any of you should loue a Gentleman of such perfection as you can wish, would it content you onelie to heare him, to see him daunce, to marke his personage, to delight in his wit, to wonder at his qualities, and desire no other solace? If you like to heare his pleasant voice to sing, his fine fingers to play, his proper personage to vndertake any exploit, would you couet no more of your Loue? As good it were for you to bee silent and thinke no, as to blush and say I.

I must needs conclude with Philautus, though I should cauell with Euphues, that the end of loue is the full fruition of the partie beloued at all times and in all places. For it cannot follow in reason, that because the sauce is good which should prouoke mine appetite, therefore I should forsake the meate for which it was made. Beloeue mee, the qualities of the minde, the beautie of the body, either in man or woman, are but sauce to whet our stomackes, not meat to fill them. For they that liue by the view of beauty, still look very leane, and they that feed onely vpon vertue at word, will goe with a hungry belly to bed. But I will not craue herein your resolute answer, because betwene them it was not determined, but euery one as he liketh, and then.

Euphues and Philautus being now againe sent for to the Ladie Flauia her house, they came presently, where they found the two this Gentleman Suius, Camilla, Mistresse Frauncis, with many

17041

Euphues and his England.

other Gentlemen and Gentlewomen. At their first entrance doing their duetie, they saluted all his companie and were welcomed.

The Ladie Flauia entertained them both very louingly, thanking Philautus for his last company, saying: be merrie Gentleman, at this time of the yeare a Violet is better then a Rose, and so shee arose and went her way: leauing Philautus in a muse at her words, who before was in a maze at Camillas looks. Camilla came to Euphues, in this manner.

I am so, Euphues, that we haue no greene rushes, considering you haue bene so great a stranger, you make mee almost to thinke that of you, which commonly I am not accustomed to iudge of any, that either you thought your selfe too good, or your chere too bad: or other cause of absence I cannot imagine, vnlesse seeing vs very idle, you sought meanes to bee well employed: but I pray you heereafter be bold, and those things which were amisse shall bee redressed: for we will haue Quailes to amend your commons, and some questions to sharpen your wits, so that you shall neither finde fault with your diet for the grosenesse, nor with your exercise for easinesse. As for your fellow and friend Philautus wee are bound to him, for hee would oftentimes see vs, but seldome eat with vs, which made vs thinke that hee cared more for our companie then our meate.

Euphues, as one that knew his good, answered her in this wise. Faire Ladie, it were vnseemlie to strewe greene rushes for his romping, whose compnie is not worth a strale, or to account him a stranger, whose boldnes hath bene strange to all those that knew him to be a stranger.

The small abilitie in mee to requite, compared with the great chere I receiued, might happily make mee restraine, which is contrarie to your coniecture: Neither was I euer so busied in any waightie affaires, which I accounted not as lost time, in respect of the exercise I alwaies found in your company, which maketh me thinke that your latter obiection proceeded rather to conuince mee for a Trewant, then to manifest a truth.

As for the Quailes you promise me, I can be content with base: and for the questions, they must bee easie, else shall I not answer them,

Euphues and his England.

them, for my wit will shew with what grosse diet I haue beene brought by: so that conferring my rude replies with my base birth, you will think that meane cheere will serue me, and reasonable questions deceiue me: so that I shall neither finde fault for my repast, nor fauour for my reasons. Philautus, indeed taketh as much delight in good company, as in good Cates, who shall answer for himselfe: with that Philautus said:

Truely Camilla, where I thinke my selfe welcome, I loue to be bold, and when my stomacke is filled, I care for no meate: so that I hope you will not blame me, if I come often and eate little. I do not blame you by my faith (quoth Camilla) you mistake me, for the oftner you come, the better welcome: and the lesse you eat, the more is saued.

Much talke passed, which being onely as it were a repetition of former things, I omit as superfluous: but this I must note, that Camilla earnestly desired Surius to bee acquainted with Euphues, who very willingly accomplished her request, desiring Euphues for the good report hee had heard of him, that hee would bee as bold with him, as with any one in England. Euphues humbly shewing his dutie, promised also as occasion should serue to try him.

It now grew toward supper time, when the Table being couered, and the meat serued in, Lady Flauia placed Surius ouer against Camilla, and Philautus next mistresse Frauncis, she tooke Euphues and the rest, and placed them in such order as shee thought best. What cheere they had I know not: what talke they vsed I heard not: but supper being ended, they sate still, the Lady Flauia speaking as followeth.

Gentlemen and Gentlewomen, these Lenten eueninges be long, and a shame it were to goe to bed: cold they are, and therefore folly it were to walke abroad: to play at Cards is common, at Chesse tedious, at Dice vnseemely, with Christmas games vntimely. In my opinion therefore, to passe away these long nights, I would haue some pastime that might be pleasant, but not vnprofitable: rare, but not without reasoning: so shall we all account the euening well spent, be it neuer so long: which otherwise would be

17049

Euphues and his England.

be tedious, were it neuer so short. Surius the best in the company, and therefore best worthy to answer; and the wisest, and therefore best able, replied in this manner.

Good Madam, you haue preuented my request with your own, for as the case now standeth, there can be nothing either more agreeable to my honor, or these Gentlewomens desires, then to vse some discourse, aswell to renew old traditions, which haue beene heretofore vsed, as to increase friendship, which hath bene by the meanes of certaine odde persons defaced. Euery one gaue his consent with Surius, yeelding the choice of that nights pastime, to the discretion of the Lady Flauia, who thus proposed her minde.

Your taske, Surius, shall be to dispute with Camilla, and choose your owne argument: Philautus shall argue with Mistresse Fraunces: Martius with my selfe. And all hauing finished their discourses, Euphues shall be as Iudge, who hath done best: and whatsoener he shall allot either for reward to the worthiest, or for penance vnto the worst, shall bee presently accomplished. This liked them all exceedingly: And thus Surius, with a good grace and pleasant speech, began to enter the lists with Camilla.

Faire Lady, you know I flatter not, I haue read that the sting of an Aspe were incurable, had not nature giuen them dim eyes, and the beauty of women no lesse infectious, had not nature bestowed on them gentle hearts: which maketh me ground my reason vpon this common place, that beautifull women are euer mercifull; if mercifull, vertuous; if vertuous, constant; if constant, though no more then Goddesses, yet no lesse then Saints: all these things granted, I vge my question without condition.

If Camilla, one wounded with your beauty (for vnder that name I comprehend all other vertues) should sue to open his affection, serue to try it, and driue you to so narrow a point, that were you neuer so incredulous, he should proue it, yea, so farre to be from suspicion of deceit, that you would confesse he were cleere from distrust, what answer would you make if you gaue your consent, or what excuse if you denie your courtesie?

Camilla, who desired nothing more then to be questioning with
Surius

Euphues and his England.

Surius, with a modest countenance, yet somewhat bashfull, (which added more commendation to her speech then disgrace) replied in this manner.

Though there be no cause, noble Gentleman, to suspect an iniurie where a good turne hath beene receiued; yet is it wisdom to be carefull what answer be made, where the question is difficult. I haue heard that the Tortoise in India, when the Sunne shineth, swimmeth aboue the water with her backe, and being delighted with the faire weather, forgetteth her selfe, untill the heat of the Sunne so harden her shell, that shee cannot sinke when shee would, whereby she is caught. And so may it fare with me, that in this good company displaing my minde, hauing more regard to my delight in talking, then to the cares of the hearers, I forget what I speake, and so be taken in some thing, the which I would not utter, which happily the itching eares of yong Gentlemen would so canuas, that when I would call it in, I cannot; and so be caught with the Tortoise, when I would not. Therefore if any thing be spoken either vnwares or vniustly, I am to craue pardon for both: hauing but a weake memory, and a worse wit, which you cannot deny me: for that we say women are to be borne withall, if they offend against their wils: and not much to be blamed, if they trip with their wils: the one proceeding of forgetfulness, the other of their naturall weakness: but to the matter.

If my beauty, (which God knowes how simple it is) should intangle any with desire; then should I thus thinke, that either he were inflamed with lust, rather then loue (for that he is moued by my countenance, not inquiring of my conditions) or else that I gaue some occasion of lightnesse, because hee gathereth a hope to speed, where he neuer had the heart to speake. But if at the last I should perceiue that his faith were tried like gold in the fire; that his affection proceeded from a minde to please, not from a mouth to delude, then would I either answer his loue with liking, or weane him fro it by reason. For I hope Sir, you will not think this, but that there should be in a woman, as well a tongue to denie, as in a man to desire: that as men haue reason to like for beauty, where they loue:

Euphues and his England.

¶ Euen so women haue wit to refuse for sundry causes, where they loue not: Otherwise were we bound to such an inconuenience, that whosoever serued vs, wee should answer his sute, when in euery respect we mislike his conditions: so that nature might be said to frame vs for others humors, not for our owne appetite. Wherein to some we should be thought very courteous, but to the most scarce honest. For mine owne part, if their be any thing in mee to be liked of any, I think it reason to bestowe on such a one, as hath also somewhat to content me: so that where I know my selfe loued, and doe loue againe, I would vpon iust triall of his constancy, take him. Surius without any scope or long pause, replied presently.

Lady, if the Tortoise, you speake of in India, were as cunning in swimming, as you are in speaking: he would neither feare the heate of the sun, nor the gin of the fisher. But that excuse was brought in, rather to shew what you could say, then to craue pardon for that you haue said. But to our answer.

¶ What your beauty is, I will not heere dispute; lest either your modest eares should glow to heare your owne praises, or my smooth tong trip in being curious to your perfection: so that what I cannot commend sufficiently, I will not cease continually to maruell at. You wander in one thing out of the way, where you say that many are inflamed with the countenance, not enquiring of the conditions, when this position was before grounded, that there was none beautifull, but she was also mercifull, and so drawing by the face of her beauty, all other Morall vertues: for as one thing being touched with the Load stone, draweth another, and that his fellow, till it come to a chaine: so a Lady indued with beauty, pulleth on courtesie: courtesie, mercy: and one vertue links it selfe to another, vntill there be a rare perfection.

¶ Besides, touching your owne lightnesse, you must not imagine that loue breedeth in the heart of man, by your looks, but by his owne eyes, neither by your words when you speake wittily, but by his owne eares, which conceiue aptly. So that were you dumme and could not speak, or blind and could not see, yet should you be beloved: which argueth plainely, that the eye of the man is the arrow: the beauty of the woman, the white, which shooteth not, but recei-
ueth

Euphues and his England.

ness, being the patient, not the agent: vpon triall you confesse you would trust, but what triall you require, you conceale, which maketh me to suspect, that either you would haue a triall without meane, or without end, either not to bee sustained being impossible, or not to be finished, being infinite. Wherein you would haue one runne in a Circle, where there is no way out, or build in the ayre, where there is no meanes how.

This triall, Camilla, must be sifted to narrow points, lest in seeking to trie your louer like a Jennet, you trie him like a Jade. Then you require this libertie (which trulie I cannot denie you) that you may haue the choice, as well to refuse, as the man hath to effect, requiring by that reason some qualities in the person you would bestow your loue on: yet craftilie hiding what properties either please you best, or like women well: wherein againe you moue a doubt, whether personage, or wealth, or wit, or all, are to bee required: so that what with the close triall of his faith, and the subtill wishing of his qualities, you make either your louer so holie, that for faith he must be made all of truth, or so exquisite, that for shape he must be framed in Wax: which if it be your opinion, the beautie you haue will bee withered before you be wedded, and your wooers good old Gentlemen before they be speeders.

Camilla, not permitting Surlus to leape ouer the hedge, which she set for to keepe him in, with a smiling countenance shapd him this answer.

IF your position be granted, that where beautie is there is also vertue, then might you adde, that where a faire flower is, there is also a sweet saour: which how repugnant it is to our common experience, there is none but knoweth: and how contrarie the other is to truth, there is none but seeth. Why then doe you not set downe this for a rule, which is agreeable to reason, that Rodophe being beautifull (if a good complexion and faire saour bee termed beautie) was also vertuous: that Laïs extelling, was also honest: that Phrine surpassing them both in beautie, was also courteous: But it is a reason amongst your Philosophers, that the disposition of the minde, followeth the composition of the bodie: how true in arguing it may bee I know not, how false in triall it

64041

Euphues and his England.

is, who knoweth not.

Beautie, though it bee amiable, worketh many things contrary to her faire shew, not vnlike vnto siluer, which being white, draweth blacke lines, or resembling the tall trees in Ida, which allured many to rest them vnder their shadow, and then infected them with their sent.

Now, whereas you set downe, that loue commeth not from the eyes of the woman, but from the glances of the man (vnder correction be it spoken) it is as far from the truth, as the head from the toe. For, were a Lady blind, in what can she be beautifull? If dumbe, in what manifest her wit? When as the eye hath euer bene thought the pearle of the face, and the tongue the Ambassadors of the heart. If there were such a Lady in this company, Surius, that should winke with both her eyes, when you should haue her see your amorous looks, or bee no blab of her tongue, when you would haue her answer to your questions, I cannot think, that either her vertuous conditions, or her whit & red complexion, could moue you to loue.

Although this might somewhat procure your liking, that doing what you list, shee will not see it, and speaking what you would, she will not offer it: two notable vertues, and rare in our sere, patience, and silence.

But why talke I about Ladies that haue no eyes, when there is no man that will loue them, if he himselfe haue eyes? More reason there is to loue one that is dumbe, so that shee cannot deny your sute: and yet hauing eares to heare, shee may as well giue an answer with a signe, as a sentence: But to the purpose.

Loue commeth not from him that loueth, but from the partie loved, else must he take his loue vpon no cause, and then it is lust, or thinke himselfe the cause, and then it is no loue. When must you conclude thus, if there be not in women the occasion, they are fools to trust men that praise them: if the cause bee in them, then are not men wise to arrogate it to themselves.

It is the eye of the woman that is made of Adamant, the heart of the man that is framed of Iron, and I cannot thinke you will say, that the vertue attractiue is in the Iron which is drawne by force, but in the Adamant that searcheth it perforce. And this is the reason that many men haue bene entangled against their willes with
loue

Euphues and his England.

loue, and kept in it with their wils.

You know, Surlus, that the fire is in the flint that is stricken, not in the Steele that striketh, the light in the Sunne that lendeth, not in the Moone th it borroweth: the loue in the woman that is seduced, not in the man that sueth.

The similitude you brought in of the arrow, flew nothing right to beautie, wherefore I must shote that shaft at your owne breast. For if the eie of man bee the arrow, and beautie the white (a faire marke for him that draweth in Cupids bowe) then must it necessarily insue, that the Archer desireth with an ayme to hit the white not the white the arrow, that the marke allureth the Archer, not the shooter the mark, and therefore is Venus said in one eie to haue two apples, which is commonly applied to those that witch with the eies, not those that wooe with the eies.

Touching triall, I am neither so foolish to desire things impossible, nor so froward to request that which hath no end. But words shall neuer make me beleue without woorkes, lest in following a faire shadowe, I lose the firme substance, and in one word to set downe the onely triall that a Lady requireth of her Louer, it is this: That he performe as much as he sware, that euery oath be a daede, euery glose a Gospel, promising nothing in his talke, that he performe not in his triall.

The qualities that are required of the mind, are good conditions: as temperance, not to erre in diet: chastity, not to sinne in desire: constancie, not to couet change: wit to delight, wisdom to instruct, mirth to please with out offence, and modesty to gouerne without precisenesse.

Concerning the body, as there is no Gentlewoman so curious to haue him in print, so there is no one so carelesse to haue him a wretch onely his right shape to shew him a man, his Christendome to proue his faith, indifferent wealth to maintaine his family, expecting all things necessarie, nothing superfluous. And so conclud with you, Surlus, vntlesse I might haue such a one, I had as leue be buried as married, wishing rather to haue no beautie and die a chaste Virgin, then no ioy, and liue a cursed wife. Surlus as one daunted hauing little to answer, yet delighted to heare her speake, with a short speech uttered these words.

17041

Euphues and his England.

I Perceiue Camilla, that be your cloth neuer so bad, it will take some colour, and your cause neuer so false, it will beare some helpe of probabilitie: wherein you manifest the right nature of a woman, who hauing no way to win, thinketh to ouercome with words.

This I gather by your answer, that beautie may haue faire leaues and foule fruite: that all that are amiable are not honest: that loue preceideth of the womans perfection, and the mans follie: that the triall looked for, is to perforce whatsoeuer they promise, that in minde he be vertuous, in body comely: such a husband in my opinion is to be wished for, but not looked for. Take heede, Camilla, that seeking all the world for a straight sticke, you chouse not at the last a crooked staffe: or describing a good counsell to others, thou thy selfe follow not the worst: much like to Chius, who selling the best Wine to others, dranke himselfe the lees.

Truly, quoth Camilla, my wool was black, and therefore it could take no other colour, and my cause good, and therefore admitted no cauell: as for the rules I set downe of loue, they were not coyned of me, but learned: and being so true, beleued. If my fortune be so ill, that searching for a wand, I gather a Camocke, or selling Wine to other, I drinke Vinegar my selfe, I must be content, that of the worst poore helpe patience: which by so much the more is to be borne, by how much the more it is perforce.

As Surius was speaking, the Lady Flauia preuented him, saying: it is time that you breake off your speech, lest wee haue nothing to speake, for should you wade any farther, you woulde both waste the night, and leaue vs no time, and take our reasons, and leaue vs no matter: that euery one therefore may say somewhat, we command you to cease: that you haue both said so well, wee giue you thanks. Thus letting Surius and Camilla to whisper by themselves (whose talke wee will not heare) the Ladie began in this manner to greete Martius.

Wee see, Martius, that where young folkes are, they treat of loue, when Souldiers meete, they confer of warre, Painters of their colours, Musicians of their crotchets, and euery one talketh of that most, he liketh best. Which, seeing it is so, it behooueth vs that haue more yeeres, to haue more wisdom, not to measure our talke

Euphues and his England.

talke by the affections we haue had, but by those we should haue.

In this therefore I would know thy minde, whether it be conuenient for women to haunt such places where Gentlemen are, or for men to haue access to Gentlewomen, which me thinketh in reason cannot be tollerable: knowing that there is nothing more pernicious to either, then loue, and that loue breedeth by nothing sooner then lookes. They that feare water, will come neere no Welles: they that stand in dread of burning, flie from the fire: and ought not they that would not be intangled with desire, to refraine company? If loue haue the pangs which the passionate set down, why doe they not abstaine from the cause? If it be pleasant, why do they dispraise it?

We shun the place of pestilence, for feare of infection: the eies of Catharismes, because of diseases; the sight of the Basilisk, for feare of death: and shall we not eschue the company of them that may intap vs in loue, which is more bitter then any destruction? If wee flie thieues that steale our goods, shall wee follow murtherers that cut our throates? If wee be hædie to come where Waspes bee, lest we be stung, shall we hazard to runne where Cupid is, where wee shall be stifled? Cruely, Martius, in my opinion, there is nothing either more repugnant to reason, or abhorring from Nature, then to seeke that we should shun; leauing the cleare streame, to drinke of the muddy Ditch, or in the extremity of heate, to lye in the parching Sunne, when we may sleepe in the cold shadow: or being free from fancy, to seeke after loue, which is as much as to coole a hot liuer with strong wine, or to cure a weake stomacke with raw flesh. In this I would heare thy sentence, induced the rather to this discourse, for that Surus and Camilla haue begun it, then that I like it. Loue in me hath neuer power to command, nor perswasion to intreat. Which how idle a thing it is, and how pestilent to youth, I partly know, and you, I am sure can ghesse.

Martius not very yong to discourse of these matters, yet desirous to vtter his mind, whether it were to flatter Surus in his will, or to make triall of the Ladies, began thus to frame his answer.

Madame, there is in Chio the image of Diana, which to those that enter, seemeth sharp and sowre, but returning after their sutes made, looketh with a merry and pleasant countenance. And it may
be,

17049

Euphues and his England.

be, that at the entrance of my discourse, you will bend your browses as one displeased, but hearing my profe, be delighted and satisfied. The question you mone is, whether it be requisite that Gentlemen and Gentlewomen should meet. Truly among Louers it is conuenient to augment desire, amongst those that are firme, necessarie to maintaine society. For, to take away all meeting for feare of loue, were to kindle among all, the fire of hate. There is greater danger, to Adam, by absence, which breedeth melancholy, then by presence, which ingendzeth affection.

If the sight be so perillous, that the company should bee barred: why then admit you those to see bankets, that may thereby surset, or suffer them to eat their meat by a candle that haue soze eies: To be separated from one I loue would make me more constant, & to keepe company with her I loue not, would not kindle desire. Loue commeth as well in at the eares, by the report of good conditions, as in at the eies, by the amiable countenance, which is the cause that diuers haue loued those they neuer saw, and seene those they neuer loued.

You allege, all those that feare drowning come nere no Wels, nor they that dread burning, nere no fire. Why then let them stand in doubt also to wash their hands in a shallow brooke, for that Seraus falling into a channell, was drownded: and let him that is cold neuer warme his hands, for that a sparke fell into the eies of Adina, wherof she died. Let none come into the company of women, for that diuers haue bene allured to loue, and being refused, haue vsed violence to themselves. Let this be set down for a Law, that none walk abroad in the day but men, lest meeting a beautifull Woman, he fall in loue, and loose his liberty.

I thinke, Madame, you will not be so precise to cut off a'l conference, because loue commeth by often communication, which if you do, let vs all now presently depart, lest in seeing the beauty which dazeleth our eies, and hearing the wisdomes which tickleth our eares, wee bee inflamed with loue. But you shall neuer beate the flye from the Candle, though shee burne: nor the Quail from the Hemlock, though it be poison: nor the Louer from the company of his Lady, though it bee perillous. It falleth out sundrie times, that company is the cause to shake off loue, working the effect of the
roote

Euphues and his England.

roote of Rubarbe, which being full of choler, pugeth choler, or of the Scorpions sting, who being full of poyson, is a remedy for poyson. But this I conclude, that to barre one that is in loue, of the company of his Lady, maketh him rather mad then mortified: for him to refraine that neuer knew loue, is either to suspect him of folie without cause, or the next way for him to fall into folly when he knoweth the cause.

A Louer is like the hearbe Helitropium, which alwaies inclineth to that place where the Sunne shineth, and being depriued of the Sunne, dieth. For as Lunaris hearb, as long as the Moone wareth, bringeth forth leaues, and in the waning shaketh them off: so a Louer, whilst he is in the company of his Lady, where all ioies increase, uttereth many pleasant conceits, but banished from the sight of his Distresse, where all mirth decreaseth, either liueth in melancholy, or dieth with desperation.

The Lady Flauia, speaking in his case, proceeded in this manner. Truly Martius, I had not thought that as yet your Colts tooth stuck in your mouth, or that so old a trewant in loue, could hitherto remember his lesson. You seeme not to inferre that it is requisite they should meet: but being in loue, that it is conuenient: lest falling into a mad moode, they pine in there owne pœuishment. Why then let it follow, that the drunkard which surfeteth with wine, be alwaies quaffing, because he liketh it: or the Epicure, which glutteth himselfe with meat, be euer eating, for that it contenteth him, nor seeking at any time the meanes to redresse their vices, but to renewe them. But it fareth with the Louer as it doth with him that poureth in much Wine, who is euer more thirsty then he that drinketh moderately, for hauing once tasted the delights of loue, hee desireth the thing most, that hurteth him most; not laying a plaister to the wound, but a coxasue.

Besides, I am of this minde, that if it be dangerous to lay flaxe to the fire, salt to the eyes, Sulphure to the nose, that then it cannot be but perilous, to let one Louer come in the presence of the other. Surius ouerhearing the Lady, and seeing her so earnest, although he were more earnest in his sute to Camilla, cut her off with these words.

Good Madam, giue me leaue either to depart, or to speake, for

17041

Euphues and his England.

in truth you gall mee more with these tearmes then you wisse, in seeming to inueigh so bitterly against the meeting of louers, which is the onely marrow of loue: and though I doubt not but that Marius is sufficiently armed to answer you, yet would I not haue those reasons refelled, which I loath to haue repeated. It may bee you offer them not of malice you beare to loue, but onely to moue controuersie where there is no question: for if you enuy to haue Louers meete, why did you grant vs: if allow it, why seeke you to separate vs?

The good Ladie could not refraine from laughter, when shes saw Surius so angrie, who in the midst of his owne tale was troubled with hers, whom she thus againe answered.

I crie you mercie Gentleman, I had not thought to haue catched you when I fished for another: but I perceiue now, that with one Beane it is easie to catch two Widdions, and with one baite to haue diuers bites. I see that others may ghesse where the shoe wryngs, besides him that weares it.

Madame, quoth Surius, you haue caught a Frogge, if I bee not deceiued, and therefore as good it were not to hurt him, as not to eat him: but if all this while your Ladiship angled to haue a bite at a Louer, you should haue vsed no bitter medicines, but pleasant baites.

I cannot tell, answered Flauia, whether my baite were bitter or not, but sure I am, I haue the fish by the gill that doth me good.

Camilla, not willing to be silent, put in her spoake as she thought in the best while, and began in this manner: Ladie, your cunning may deceiue you in fishing with an angle, therefore to catch him you would haue, you werc best to vse a net.

A net, quoth Flauia, I need none, for my fish playeth in a net already. With that Surius began to winch, replying immediatlie. So doth many a fish, good Ladie, that slippeth out when the fisher thinketh him fast in: and it may be, that either your net is too weak to hold him, or your hand too wet.

A wet hand, quoth Flauia, will holde a dead Herring. I, quoth Surius, but Celes are no Herrings. But Louers are, said Flauia.

Surius, not willing to haue the grasse motwen, whereof he meant to make his Hay, began thus to conclude. Good Madame leaue off

Euphues and his England.

off fishing for this time, and though it bee Lent, rather break a statute which is but penail, then sue a Bond that may bee perpetuall.

I am content, quoth Flauia, rather to fast for once, then to want a pleasure for euer: yet Sorius, betwixt vs two I will at large proue, that there is nothing in loue more venemous then meeting, which filleth the minde with griefe, and the body with diseases: for hauing the one, he cannot faile of the other. But now Philautus, and Peere Frauncis, since I am cut off, begin you, but be short, because the time is short, and that I was more short then I would.

Frauncis, who was euer of wit quicke, and of nature pleasant, seeing Philautus all this while to bee in his dumps, began thus to play with him.

Gentleman, either you are musing who shall bee your second Wife, or who shall father your first Childe, else would you not all this while hang your head, neither attending to the discourses that you haue heard, nor regarding the companie you are in: or it may be (which of both coniectures is likeliest) that hearing so much talke of loue, you are either diuened to the remembrance of the Italian Ladies which once you serued, or else to the seruice of those in England, which you haue since your comming scene: or as Andromache whensoever she saw the Tombe of Hector, could not refrain from weeping, or as Laodomia could neuer behold the picture of Proteilaus in Ware, but she alwaies fainted: So louers, whensoever they view the image of their Ladies, though not the same substance, yet the similitude in shadowe, they are so benumbed in their ioints, and so bereft of their wits, that they haue neither the power to moue their bodie to shew life, nor their tongues to make answer: so that I thinking that with your other senses you had also lost your smelling, thought rather to be a Thorne, whose point might make you feeble somewhat, then a violet, whose saour could cause you to smell nothing.

Philautus, perceiuing this Gentlewoman so pleasantlie disposed, with a merrie countenance, and quicke wit, began to make answer in this maner.

Gentlewoman, to studie for a second wife before I know my first, were to resemble the good huswife in Naples, who toke
thought

17041

Euphues and his England.

thought to bring forth her chickens, before shee had hennies to lay egges: and to muse who should father my first child, were to doubt when the Cow is mine, who should owe the calfe. But I will neither be so hasty to beat my braine about two wines, before I know where to get one, nor so iealous to mistrust her fidelitie, when I haue one.

Touching the view of Ladies, or the remembrance of my loue, mee thinketh it should rather sharpe the point in mee, then abate the edge. My senses are not lost, though my labour be, and therefore my good violet, pricke him not forward with sharpnes, whom thou shouldest rather comfort with sauiors. But to put you out of doubt, that my wits were not all this while a woe-gathering, I was debating with my selfe, whether in loue it were better to bee constant, beloying al the counsells, or secret being ready euery houre to flinch: and so many reasons came to confirme either, that I could not be resolved in any.

constancie To be constant, what thing more requisite in loue: when it shall alwaies be greene like the Iuie, though the sunne parch it: that shall euer be hard like the true Diamond, though the Hammer beat it: that stil groweth with the good Vine, though the knife cut it. Constancie is like vnto the Storke, who, wheresoeuer shee flie, cometh into no nest but her owne: or the Lapwing, whom nothing can driue from her young ones but death. But to reueale the secrets of loue, the counsells, the conclusions, what greater despite to his Lady, or more shamefull discredite to himselfe can be imagined, when there shall no letter passe, but it shall bee disclosed, no talke vttered, but it shall be againe repeated, nothing done, but it shall be reuealed. Which when I considered, mee though it better to haue one that should bee secret, though fickle, then a blab, though constant? For what is there in the world, that more delighteth a Louer then secrecie: which is voide of feare, without suspicion, free from enuie: the onely hope a woman hath to build both her hono^r and honestie vpon.

The tongue of a Louer should be like the point in a Diall, which though it goe, none can see it going: or a young Tree, which though it grow, none can perceiue it growing, hauing alwaies the stone in his mouth which the Cranes vse when they flie ouer the mountaines,

Euphues and his England.

mountaines, lest they make a noise : but to be silent, and lightly to esteeme of his Lady, to shake her off though shee bee secret, to change for euery thing, though hee be tray nothing, is the onely thing that cutteth the heart in peeces of a true and constant louer : which deepe ly waighing with my selfe, I preferred him that would neuer remooue, though he reueale all, before him that would con- ceale all, and euer bee sliding : thus waisting too and fro, I appeale to you, my good violet, whether in loue bee more required, secrecy or constancie.

Frauncis with her accustomable boldnes, yet modestly, replied as followeth. Gentleman, if I should aske you whether in the making of a good sword, yron were more to be required, or Steele, sure I am that you would answer that both were necessary. Or if I should be so curious to demand, whether in a tale told to your Lady, disposition or inuention be most conuenient, I cannot thinke but you would iudge them both expedient. For as one mettall is to be tempered with another in fashioning a good blade, lest either being all of Steele, it quickly breake, or all of yron, it neuer cut : so fareth it in speech, which if it bee not seasoned as well with wit to moue delight, as with Arte to manifest cunning, there is no eloquence. And in no other manner standeth it with loue : for to bee secret and constant, or constant and not secret, were to build a house of moxter without stones, or a wall of stones without moxter. There is no liuely picture drawn with one colour : no curious Image wrought with one toole : no perfect musick plaied with one string, and wouldst thou haue loue the patterne of eternity, coloured either with constancy alone, or onely secrecy :

There must in euery Triangle bee three lines : the first beginneth, the second augmenteth, the third concludeth it a figure. So in loue, three vertues : affection, which draweth the heart, secrecy, which increaseth the hope, constancy, which finisheth the worke : without any of these rules there can be no Triangle, without any of these vertues, no loue.

There is no man that runneth with one legge, no bird that flieth with one winge, no loue that lasteth with one lim. Loue is likened to the Emeraud, which cracketh rather then consenteth to any disloyaltie : and can there bee any greater villanie, then being se-

17041

Euphues and his England.

crete, not to be constant, or being constant, not to be secrete. But it falleth out with those that be constant and yet full of babble, as it doth with the Serpent Iaculus, and the Aiper, who burst with their owne blood, and these are tozned with their owne tongues.

It is no question, Philautus, to aske which is best, when being not ioined, there is neuer a good. If thou make a question where there is no doubt, thou must take an answer where there is no reason. Why then also dost thou not enquire, whether it were better for a Horse to want his fore legges or his hinder, when hauing not all, he cannot trauell. Why art thou not inquisitiue whether it were more conuenient for the Wrestlers in the games of Olimpia to be without armes, or without feete? or for Trees to want rootes, or lacke tops, when either is impossible. There is no true Louer, beleeue mee, Philautus, sense telleth mee so, not triall, that hath not faith, secrecie, and constancie. If thou want either, it is lust, not loue: and that thou hast not them all, thy profound question assureth mee: which if thou diddest aske to trie my wit, thou thoughtest me very dull, if to resolute thy selfe of a doubt, I cannot thinke thee very sharpe.

Philautus, that perceiued her to be so sharpe, thought once againe like a Whetstone to make her sharper, and in these words returned his answer.

O sweet Violet, you are not vnlike vnto those who hauing gotten the start in a race, thinke none too nere their heeles because they be foremost: for hauing the tale in your mouth, you imagine it is all truth, and that none can controule it.

Frauncis, who was very much vnwilling to heare him goe forward in so fond an argument, cut him off befoze hee should come to his conclusion, in this manner.

Gentleman, the faster you runne after me, the farther you are from me: therefore I would wish you take heed, that in seeking to strike at my heeles, you trip not by your owne. You would faine with your wit cast a white vpon blacke, wherein you are not vnlike vnto those, that seeing their shadow very short in the Sun, thinke to touch their head with their heele, and putting forth their legge, are further from it then when they stood still. In my opini-

Euphues and his England.

on it were better to sit on the ground with a litle ease, then to rise and fall with great danger.

Philautus being in a maze to what end his talke should tend, thought that either Camilla had made her priuie to his loue, or that shee meant by suspition to intcap him: therefore meaning to leaue his former question, and to answer her speech, proceeded thus.

Mistresse Frauncis, you resemble in your sayings the Painter Samantes, in whose pictures there was euer more vnderstood then painted: for with a glose you seeme to shadow that, which in colours you will not shew. It cannot be (my violet) that the faster I runne after you, the farther I should bee from you, vnlesse that either you haue wings tied to your heeles, or I thornes thrust into mine. The last dogge oftentimes catcheth the Hare, though the fleetest turne him: the slow snaille climeth to the Tower at last, though the swift Swallow mount it: the laziest winneth the goale sometimes, though the lightest bee nere it. In hunting I had as leeu stand at receit, as at the losing: in running rather indure long with an easie aumble, then leaue off, being out of wind with a swift gallop: Especially when I run as Hippomenes did with Atalanta, who was last in the course, but first at the Crowne: So that I guesse that women either are easie to be out stripped, or willing.

I seek not to trip at you, because I might so hinder you, and hurt my selfe: for in letting your course by striking at your short heeles, you would when I should craue pardon, shew mee an high instep. As for my shaddowe, I neuer goe about to reach it but when the Sunne is at the highest, for then is my shadow at the shortest, so that it is not difficult to touch my head with my heele, when it lieth almost vnder my heele.

You say, it is better to sit still, then to arise and fall: and I say, he that neuer climeth for feare of falling, is like vnto him that neuer drinketh for feare of surfeting. If you thinke the ground either too slippery whereon I runne, that I must needs fall, or my fete so chill, that I must neenes founder, it may be I will change my course heereafter, but I meane to end it now: for I had rather fall out of a low window to the ground, then hang in the mid-way by a Byer.

Frauncis,

17041

Euphues and his England.

Frauncis, who tooke no little pleasure to heare Philautus, began to come on roundly in these tearmes.

It is a signe, Gentleman, that your footmanship is better then your stomacke: for whatsoeuer you say, me thinketh you rather be held in a slip, then let slip: wherein you resemble the grayhound, that seeing his game, leapeth vpon him that holdeth him, not running after that he is held for: or the Hawke, which being cast off at a Partridge, taketh a stand to prune her feathers, when shee should take her flight. For it seemeth you beare good will to the game you cannot play at, or will not, or dare not: wherein you imitate the Cat that leaueth the mouse to follow the milke-pan: for I perceiue that you let the Hare goe by, and hunt the Badger.

Philautus astonied at this speech, knew not which way to frame his answer, thinking now that she perceiued his tale to be addressed to her, though his loue was fixed on Camilla: but to rid her of suspicion, though loth that Camilla should conceiue any inkling, hee plaied fast and loose in this manner.

Gentleman, you mistake me very much; for I haue bene bet-
ter taught then sed: and therefore I know how to follow my game, if it be for my gaine. For were there two Hares to run at, I would endeuour not to catch the first that I followed, but the last that I started: yet so, as the first should not escape, nor the last bee caught. You speake contraries, quoth Frauncis, and you will worke wonders: but take heede your cunning in hunting make you not to lose both.

Both, said Philautus? why, I seeke but for one: and yet of two, quoth Francis you cannot tell which to follow, one runneth so fast you will neuer catch her: the other is so at the squat, you can neuer finde her.

The Lady Flauia, whether desirous to sleepe, or loth these iesses should be too broad, as moderatoz, commanded them both to silence, willing Euphues as vniuer in these mattes, briefly to speake his mind. Camilla and Surius are yet talking: Frauncis and Philautus are not idle, yet all attentiu to heare Euphues, aswell for the expectation they had of his wit, as to know the drift of his discourses:
who

Euphues and his England.

who thus began the conclusion of all their speeches.

It was a law amongst the Persians, that the Musician should not iudge the Painter, nor any one meddle in that handy craft wherein he was not perfect : which maketh me maruell (good Hadam) that you should appoint him an vmpire in loue, who neuer yet had skill in his lawes. for although I seemed to consent by my silence, before I knew the argument wherof you would dispute, yet hearing nothing but reasons for loue, I must either call backe my promise, or cal in your discourses : and better it were in my opinion, not to haue your reasons concluded, then to haue them confuted. But sure I am, that neither a good excuse will serue where authoritie is rigorous, nor a bad one be heard where necessity compelleth. But lest I be longer in breaking a web, then the Spider is in weauing it: your pardons obtained, if I offend in sharpenes, and your patience granted, if molest in length, I thus begin to conclude against you all, not as one singular in his owne conceite, but to be tried by your gentle constructions.

Sotius beginneth with loue, which proceedeth by beauty (vnder the which he comprehendeth al other vertues.) Lady Flauia moueth a question, whether the meeting of louers bee tollerable. Philautus commeth in with two branches in his hand, as though there were no more leaues of that tree, asking whether constancy or secrecy be most to be required : great hold there hath beene who should proue his loue best, when in my opinion, there is none good. But such is the vanity of youth, that it thinketh nothing worthy either of commendation or conference, but only loue, wherof they sow much and reap little, wherein they spend al & gaine nothing, wherby they run into danger before they will, & repent their desires before they wold. I do not discommend his honest affectio that is grounded vpon vertue, as the meane, but disordinate fancy which is builded vpon lust, as an extremity : and lust I must fearme that, which is begun in an houre & ended in a minute, the common loue in this our age, where Ladies are courted for beauty, not for vertue, men loued for proportion in body, not for perfection in mind. It fareth with louers as w those that drinke of the riuer tellus in Phrigia, wherof sipping moderately, is a medicine, but swelling with excelle, it breedeth madness.

Lycurgus set it downe for a law, that where men were com-

17049

Euphuës and his England.

not only drunken, the Mines should bee destroyed, and I am of that minde, that where youth are giuen to loue, the meanes should be re-
moued. For as the earth wherein the mines of silver and golde is
hidden, are profitable for no other thing but mettals, so the heart
wherein loue is harbored, receiueth no other seed but affection. Lo-
uers seek not those things which are most profitable, but most plea-
sant, resembling those that make garlands, who choose the fairest flo-
wers not the wholsomest, & being once intangled with desire, they
alwaies haue the disease, not unlike vnto the Goate, who is neuer
without an ague: then being once in, they follow the note of the
Sightingale, which is said with continuall straining to sing to
perish in her sweet laies, as they doe in their sugred liues. Where
is it possible either to eat, or drink, or walke, but he shall heare some
question of loue: insomuch that loue is become so common, that
there is no artificer of so base a craft, no clowne so simple, no beg-
ger so poore, but either talketh of loue, or liueth in loue, when they
neither know the meanes to come by it, nor the wisdom to increase
it: & what can be the cause of these louing worms but onely idleness:
But to set down as a moderator the true perfection of loue, not like
as an enemy to talke of the infection (which is neither the part of my
office, nor pleasant to your eares) this is my iudgement.

True and vertuous loue is to be grounded vpon time, reason, fa-
uour, and vertue. Time to make triall: not at the first glance so to
settle his minde, as though he were willing to bee caught when hee
might escape, but by his obseruation and experience, to build and
augment his desires, that he be not deceived with beautie, but per-
suaded with constancie. Reason, that all his doings and proce-
dings seme not to flow from a mind enflamed with lust, but a heart
kindled with loue. Favour to delight his eies, which are the first
messengers of affection. Vertue, to allure the soule, for the which
all things are to be desired.

The arguments of faith in a man, are constancie, not be remo-
ued: secrecie, not to vtter: securitie, not to mistrust: credulitie, to
believe: in a woman patience to endure: ialousie to suspect, libera-
litie to bestow, feruency, faithfulness: one of the which branches, if
either the man want or the woman, it may be a liking between them
for the time, but no loue to continue for euer. Touching Surius his
question

Euphues and his England.

question, whether loue come from the man or the woman, it is manifest that it beginneth in both, else can it not end in both.

To the Ladie Flauias demand, concerning company, it is requisite they should meete, and though they be hindred by diuers means yet it is impossible but that they will meete.

Philautus must thus thinke, that constancie without secrecie is a little, and secrecie without constancie profiteth lesse.

Thus haue I, good Madame, according to my simple skill in loue, set downe my iudgement: which you may at your Ladiships pleasure correct, for he that neuer tooke Darts in hand, must not thinke himselfe to be taught.

Well, quoth the Lady, you can say more if you list, but either you feare to offend our eares, or to betray your owne follies. One may easily perceiue that you haue bene of late in the Painters shop, by the colours that sticke in you coate, but at this time I will vge nothing, though I suspect somewhat.

Surius gaue Euphues thanks, allowing his iudgement in the description of loue, especially in this, that he would haue a woman if shee were faithfull, to bee also iealous, which was as necessary to be required in them as constancie.

Camilla smiling, said, that Euphues was deceiued, for hee would haue said, that men should haue bene iealous, and yet that had bin but superfluous, for they are neuer otherwise.

Philautus thinking Camilla to vse such speech to gird him, for that all that night he viewed her with a suspitious eie, answered, that iealousie in a man was to bee pardoned, because there is no difference in the looke of a Louer that can distinguish a iealous eie from a louing.

Frauncis, who thought her part not to be the least, said, that in all things Euphues spake Goſpell, sauing in that hee bound a woman to patience, which was to make them foles.

Thus euery one gaue his verdit, and so with thanks to the Lady Flauia, they all tooke their leaue for that night. Surius went to his lodging: Euphues and Philautus to theirs. Camilla accompanied with her woman and her waiting maide, departed to her home, whom I meane to bring to her Chamber, leauing all the rest to their rest.

Camilla, no sooner had entred her Chamber, but shee beganne in

12041

Euphues and his England.

strange tearmes to utter this strange tale, her doore being shut, and her Chamber voided.

Ah Camilla, ah wretched wench Camilla, I perceiue now, that when the Hop groweth high, it must haue a pole, when the Fur spreadeth, it cleaueth to the flint, when the vine riseth, it draweth about the Eline, when Virgins wax in yeares, they follow that which belongeth to their appetites, loue, loue. Oea loue Camilla, the force whereof thou knowest not, and yet must endure the fury. There is that precious hearbe Panace, which cureth all diseases: or that hearb Nepenthe, that procureth all delights: No, no, Camilla, loue is not to be cured by hearbs, which comineth by fancy, neither can plaisters take away the griefe which is growne so great by persuasions. For as the stone Draconites can by no means be polished, vnlesse the Lapidary burne it: so the minde of Camilla, can by no meanes be cured, except Surius ease it. I see that loue is not vnlike vnto the stone Pannura, which draweth all other stones bee they neuer so heauy, hauing in it the three roots which they attribute to Musicke, mirth, melancholy, madnes.

I but Camilla dissemble thy loue, though it shorten thy life, for better it were to die with griefe, then liue with shame. The sponge is full of water, yet it is not seene, the hearbe Aditon, though it bee wet, looketh alwaies dry, and a wise Louer be she neuer so much tormented, behaueth her selfe as though she were not touched. I, but fire cannot be hidden in the flare without smoke, nor muske in the bosome without smel, nor loue in the breast without suspicion: Why then confesse thy loue to Surius, Camilla, who is ready to aske before thou grant. But it fareth in loue, as it doth with the roote of the Ræde, which being put into the ffearne, taketh away all his strength: and likewise the roote of the ffearne put to the Ræde, deprieth it of all his force: so the lookes of Surius hauing taken all freedome from the eies of Camilla, it may be the glances of Camilla haue beleaued Surius of his libertie: which if it were so, how happy shouldest thou be: and that it is so, why shouldest thou not hope? I, but Surius is noble. I, but loue regardeth no birth. I, but his friends will not consent. I, but loue knoweth no kindred. I, but he is not willing to loue, nor thou worthy to be wooed. I, but loue maketh
the

Euphues and his England.

the proudest to stoope, and to court the poorest.

Whilest she was thus debating, one of her Maidens chaunced to knock: which shee hearing, left off that, which all you Gentlewomen would gladly heare, for no doubt shee determined to make a long Sermon, had not she bene interrupted. But by the preamble you may ghesse to what purpose the drift tended. This I note, that they that are most wise, most vertuous, most beautifull, are not free from the impressions of fancy: for who would haue thought, that Camilla, who seemed to disdain loue, should so soone bee entangled? But as the straightest wands are to be bent when they bee small, so the precisest Virgins are to be wonne when they be young. But I will leaue Camilla, with whose loue I haue nothing to meddle, for that it maketh nothing to my matter. And returne we to Euphues, who must play the last part.

Euphues bestowing his time in the Court, began to marke diligently the men and their manners, not as one curious to misconster, but desirous to bee instructed. Many daies hee vsed speech with the Ladies sundry times with the Gentlewomen, with all became so familiar, that he was of all earnestly beloued.

Philautus had taken such a smacke in the good entertainment of the Lady Flauia, that he began to looke askew vpon Camilla, driving out the remembrance of his old loue, with the recording of the new. Who now but his violet? who but mistresse Francis? whom if once euery day he had not scene, hee would haue bene so sullen, that no man should haue scene him.

Euphues, who watched his friend, demanded how his loue proceeded with Camilla, vnto whom, Philautus gaue no answer, but a smile, by the which Euphues thought his affection but small. At the last thinking it both contrary to his oth and his honesty to conceale any thing from Euphues, he confessed that his minde was changed from Camilla to Francis. Loue, quoth Euphues, will neuer make thee mad, for it cometh by fits, not like a quotidian, but a tertian. Andeede, quoth Philautus, if euer I kill my selfe for loue, it shall bee with a sigh, not with a sword.

Thus they passed the time many daies in England; Euphues commonly in the Court to learne fashions, Philautus, euer in the Country.

17041

Euphues and his England.

Country to loue Francis, so sweete a Violet to his nose, that hee could hardly suffer it to be an houre from his nose.

But now came the time that Euphues was to trie Philautus truth: for it happened that Letters were directed from Athens, to London, concerning serious and waightie affaires of his owne, which incited him to hasten his departure: the contentes of the which, when hee had imparted to Philautus, and requested his company, his friend was so fast tied by the eies, that he found thornes in his heele, which Euphues knew to be thoughts in his heart, and by no meanes hee could perswade him to goe into Italy, so sweete was the very smoak of England.

Euphues knowing the tide would carrie for no man, and seeing his busines to require such speed, being for his great preferment, determined sodainly to depart, yet not without taking of his leaue courteously, and giuing thanks to al those which since his comming had vsed him friendly: Which, that it might bee done with one breath, hee desired the Marchant, with whom all this while hee so iourned, to inuite a great number to dinner: some of great calling, many of good credit, among the which, Surlus as chiefe, the Lady Flauia, Camilla, and Mistresse Francis, were not forgotten. The time being come of meeting, he saluted them all in this manner.

I was neuer more desirous to come into England, then I am loth to depart, such courtesie haue I found, which I looked not for, and such qualities as I could not looke for, which I speake not to flatter any, when in truth it is knowne to you all. For now the time is come that Euphues must pack from those whom hee best loueth, and goe to the Seas, which he hardly brooketh. But I would Fortune had dealt so fauorably with a poore Grecian, that he might haue either bene borne heere, or able to liue heere, which seeing the one is past and cannot be, the other unlikely, and therefore not easie to be, I must indure the cruelty of the one, and with patience beare the necessitie of the other. Yet this I earnestly craue of you all, that you will in stead of a recompence, accept thanks, and of him that is able to giue nothing, take praier for payment. What my good minde is to you all, my tongue cannot vtter, what my true meaning is, your hearts cannot conceiue: yet as occasion shall serue, I will shew that I haue not forgotten any, though I may not requite one.

Philautus

Euphues and his England.

Philautus, no wiser then I in this, though bolder, is determined to tarry behind ; for hee saith, that hee had as leeuue bee burned in England, as married in Italy, so holy doth hee thinke the ground heere, or so homely the womed there : whom although I would gladly haue with me, yet seeing I cannot, I am most earnestly to request you all, not for my sake, who ought to desire nothing, nor for his sake, who is able to deserue little, but for the courtesies sake of England, that you vse him not so well as you haue done, which would make him proud, but no worse then I wish him, which will make him pure : for though I speake before his face, you shall finde true behind his backe, that hee is yet but ware, which must bee wrought while the water is warme : and yron, which being hot, is apt either to make a key or a lock. It may, be Ladies and Gentlewomen, that although England be not for Euphues to dwell in, yet it is for Euphues to send to.

When he had thus said, hee could scarce speake for weeping : all the company were sorry to forgoe him ; some promised him money, some lands, some houses, but hee refused them all ; telling them, that not the necessitie of lacke caused him to depart, but of impoortance.

This done, they sate doونه all to dinner, but Euphues could not be merry, for that hee should so soone depart : the feast being ended, which was very sumptuous, as marchants neuer spare for cost, when they haue full Coffers, they all hartely tooke their leaues of Euphues. Camilla who liked very well of his company, taking him by the hand, desired him, that being in Athens, hee would not forget his friends in England, and the rather for your sake, quoth shee, your friend shall be better welcome : yea, and to me for his owne sake, quoth Elauia, whereat Philautus reioiced, and Francis was not sorry, who began a little to listen to the lure of loue.

Euphues, hauing all things in a readinesse, went immediatly toward Douer, whither Philautus also accompanied him, yet not forgetting by the way to visit the good old father Fidus, whose courtesies they receiued at their comming. Fidus glad to see them, made them great cheare according to his ability, which had it beene lesse, would haue beene answerable to their desires. Much communication

Euphues and his England :

communication they had of the Court, but Euphues cried quitfance, for he said, things that are commonly knowne, it were folly to repeat ; and secrets, it were against mine honesty to viter : the next morning they went to Douer, where Euphues being ready to take ship, hee first tooke his farewell of Philautus, in these words.

Philautus, the care that I haue had of thee from time to time, hath bene tried by the counsell I haue alwaies giuen thee, which if thou haue forgotten, I meane no more to write in water: if thou remember, imprint it in Steele. But seeing my departing from thee is as it were my death ; for that I know not whether euer I shall see thee, take this as my last Testament of my good will. Be humble to thy superiours, gentle to thy equals, to thy inferiours sauourable, enie not thy betters, iustle not thy fellowes, oppresse not the poore. The stipend that is allowed to maintaine thee, vse wisely : be neither prodigall to spend all, nor conetous to keepe all ; cut thy coate according to thy cloth, and thinke it better to bee accounted thyfittle among the wise, then a good companion among the riotous. For thy study, or trade of life, vse thy booke in the morning, thy Bowe after dinner, or what exercise shall please thee best : but alwaies haue an eie to the maine, whatsoeuer thou art chaunced at the bye. Let thy practise bee Law : for the practise of Physicke is too base for so fine a stomack as thine : and Diuinity too curious for so fickle a head as thou hast. Touching thy proceedings in loue, be constant to one, and try but one : otherwise, thou shalt bring thy credit into question, and thy loue into dirision. Weane thy selfe from Camilla, deale wisely with Frauncis, for in England thou shalt finde those that will decipher thy dealings, bee they neuer so politicke : be secret to thy selfe, and trust none in matters of loue, as thou louest thy life.

Certifie me of thy proceeding by thy Letters, and thinke that Euphues cannot forget Philautus, who is as deare vnto me as my selfe. Commend me to all my friends, and so farewell good Philautus, and well shalt thou fare, if thou follow the counsell of Euphues.

Philautus, the water standing in his eyes, not able to answer one word vntill he had well wept, replied at last, as it were in one

Euphues and his England.

one word, saying: that his counsell should be ingrauen in his heart, and hee would follow euery thing that was prescribed him: certifying him of his successe, as either occasion or opportunity should serue. But when friends at parting would utter most, then teares hinder most, which brake off both his answer, and staied Euphues replie: so after many millions of embracings, at the last they departed, Philautus to London, where I leaue him, Euphues to Athens, where I mean to follow him, for he it is that I am to go with, not Philautus.

There was nothing that happened vpon the Seas worthy the writing: but within few daies, Euphues hauing a merry winde arriued at Athens: where, after he had visited his friends, and set an order in his affaires, he began to adresse his lettes to Liua, touching the state of England, in this manner.

Liuia, I salute thee in the Lord, &c. I am at length returned out of England, a place in my opinion (if any such may bee in the earth) not inferiour to Paradise. I haue heere inclosed, sent thee the description, the manners, the conditions, the gouernment, and entertainment of that Countrey. I haue thought it good to dedicate it to the Ladies of Italy: if thou thinke it worthy, as thou canst not otherwise, cause it to be imprinted, that the praise of such an Ile may cause those that dwell else where, both to commend it, and maruell at it. Philautus I haue left behind me, who like an old dog followeth his old sent, Loue: wiser he is then he was wont, but as yet nothing more fortunate. I am in health, and that thou art so, I heare nothing to the contrary: but I know not how it fareth with me, for I cannot as yet bryke mine owne Countrey, I am so delighted with an other. Aduertise me by Letters what estate thou art in: also how thou likest the state of England, which I haue sent thee. And so farewell.

Thine to vse, Euphues.

To the Ladies and Gentlewomen of England, Euphues
wisseth health and honour.

If I had brought (Ladies) litle dogges from Malta, or strange
stones from India, or fine Carpets from Turkie, I am sure that
Aa either

17041

Euphues and his England.

either you would haue loved me to haue them, or wished to see them. But I am come out of England with a Glasse, wherein you shall behold the things which you neuer saw, and maruell at the sights which you haue scene. Not a glasse to make you beautifull, but to make you bluish, yet not at your vices, but others vertues: not a Glasse to dresse your haire, but to redresse your harmes; by the which, if you every morning correct your manners, being ascarefull to amend faults in your hearts, as you are curious to finde faults in your heads, you shall in short tyme be as much commended for vertue of the wise, as for beauty of the wanton. Yet at the first sight, if you seeme deformed by looking in this glasse, you must not thinke that the fault is in the glasse, but in your manners: not resembling Liwia, who seeing her beauty in a true glasse, to be but deformitie, washed her face and broke the glasse. Heere you shall see beauty accompanied with virginity, temperance, mercy, iustice, magnanimitie, and all other vertues whatsoeuer, rare in your sere, and but one, and rarer then the Phcenix, whereof I thinke there is not two. In this glasse shall you see, that the glasses, which you carie in fannes of feathers, shew you to bee lighter then feathers: that the glasses wherein you carouse your wine, make you to bee more wanton then Bacchus: that the new-found glasse chaines that you weare about your neckes, argue you to bee more brittle then glasse. But your eyes being too olde to iudge of so rare a spectacle, my counsell is, that you looke with spectacles, for ill can you abide the beame of the cleare Sunne, being scant able to view the blaze of a dyme candle. The spectacles I would haue youe vse, are for the one eye, iudgement, without flattering your selues, for the other eye heliefe, without mistrusting of mee. And then I doubt not, but you shall both thanke me for this glasse, (which I send also into all places of Europe) and thinke worse of your garish glasses, which make you of no more price then broken glasses.

Thus, faire Ladies, hoping you will be as willing to pry in this glasses for amendment of manners, as you are to pranke your selues in a looking-glasse for commendation of men; I wish you as much beauty as you would haue, so as you would endeavour to haue as much vertue as you should haue. and so farewell.

Euphues

Euphues and his England.

Euphues glasse for Europe.

There is an Ile lying in the Ocean Sea, directly against that part of Fraunce, which containeth Picardie and Normandie, called now England, heretofore named Britaine. It hath Ireland on the West side, on the North the maine Sea, on the East the Germany Ocean. This Island is in circuite 1720. miles, in forme like vnto a Triangle, being broadest in the South part and gathering narrower and narrower, till it come to the farthest point of Cathnesse Northward, where it is narrowest, and there endeth in the manner of a Pyramontorie. To reapeate the ancient manner of this Island, or what sundry Nations haue inhabited there, to set downe the Giants, which in bignes of bone haue passed the common size, and almost common credite, to rehearse what diuersities of languages haue bene vsed, into how many kingdoms it hath bene diuided, what Religions haue bene followed before the comming of Christ, although it would breede great delight to your eies, yet might it happily seeme tedious: for that Honny taken excessiuely, cloyeth the stomacke, though it bee Honny. But my minde is briefely to touch such things as at my being there, I gathered by mine owne studie and inquirie, not meaning to write a Chronicle, but to set downe in a word what I heard by conference.

It hath in it twentie and sixe Cities, of the which the chiefest is named London, a place both for the beautie of building, infinite riches, varietie of all things, that excelleth all the cities in the world: insomuch that it may bee called the store-house and Mart of all Europe. Close by this citie runneth the famous River, called the Thames, which from the head where it riseth named Isis, vnto the full midway, it is thought to bee one hundred and fourscore miles. What can there bee in any place vnder the heauens, that is not in this noble citie, either to bee bought or borrowed? It hath diuers Hospitals for the releuing of the poore, sixe-score faire churches for diuine seruice, a glorious Burse, which they call The Royall Exchange, for the meeting of Marchantes of all countries, where any traffique is to bee had. And among all the

17049

Euphues and his England.

strange and beautifull shewes, mee thinkes there is none so notable as the Bridge which crosseth the Thames, which is in the manner of a continuall streete, well replenished with large and stately houses on both sides, and situate vpon twentie Arches, whereof each one is made of excellent free stones squared, euery one of them being threescore foote in height, and full twenty in distance one from another. To this place the whole Realme hath his recourse, whereby it seemeth so populous, that one would scarce think so many people to be in the whole Island, as he shall see sometimes in London.

This maketh Gentlemen braue, and Merchantes rich, Cittizens to purchase, and sojourners to mortgage: so that it is to be thought, that the greatest wealth and substance of the whole Realme, is couched within the walles of London, where they that be rich, keep it from them that be riotous, not detaining it from the lustie yonths of England by rigour, but increasing it vntill yong men shall sauour of reason: wherein they shew themselves Treasurers for others, not hoarders for themselves: yet althoughe it bee sure enough, would they had it, in my opinion it were better to bee in the Gentlemans purse, then in the Merchantes handes.

There are in this Island two and twentie Bishops, which are as it were Superintendents ouer the Church, men of great zeale and deepe knowledge, diligent Preachers of the word, earnest followers of their doctrine, carefull watchmen that the Wolfe deuour not the sheepe: in the Ciuill government politick, in ruling the spirituall sword (as far as in them vnder the Prince appertaineth) iust, cutting off those members from the Church by rigour, that are obstinate in their heresies, and instructing those that are ignorant, appointing godly and learned Ministers in euery of their Sees, that in their absence may bee lights to such as are in darknes, salt to those that are vnseasoned, leaven to such as are vnleavened. Visitationis are holden oftentimes: whereby abuses and disorders, either in the Laity for negligence, or in the Clergie for superstition, or in all for wicked liuing there are punishmentes: by due execution whereof, the diuine seruice of God is honoured with more puritie, and followed with greater sinceritie. There are also in this Island two famous Vniuersities, the one Oxford, the other

Euphues and his England.

other Cambridge, both for the profession of all Sciences, for Divinitie, Physicke, Law, and all kind of learning, excellling all the Universities in Christendome.

I was my selfe in either of them, and like of them both so well, that I meane not in the way of controuersie to prefer any for the better in England, but both for the best in the world: sauing this, the Colledges in Oxford are much more statelie for the building, and Cambridge much more sumptuous for the houses in the towne; but the learning neither lieth in the free stones of the one, nor the fine streetes of the other, for out of them both doe daily proceed men of great wisdom to rule the Common-wealth, of learning, to instruct the common people, of all singular kinds professions to doe good withall. And let this suffice, not to enquire which of them is the superiour, but that neither of them haue their equall: nor to aske which of them is the most auncient, but whether any other be so famous.

But to procede, in England their buildings are not very statelie, vnlesse it bee the houses of Noblemen, and here and there the place of a Gentleman, but much amended, as they report that haue tolde mee. For their Puntition, they haue not onely great force, but also great cunning to vse them, and courage to practise them: their armor is not vnlike vnto that which in other Countries they vse: as Corlets, Aimaire Riues, shirts of male, Jacks quilted, and couered ouer with Leather, Fustian, or Canuas ouer thicke plates of yron that are solwed to the same. The Ordnance they haue is great, and thereof great store. Their Panie is diuided as it were into thre sortes, of the which the one serueth for warres, the other for burthen, the other for fishermen. And some vessels there bee (I know not by experience, and yet beleue by circumstance) that will saile nine hundred miles in a weeke, when I should scarce thinke that a bird will flie foure hundred. Touching their commodities, they haue foure Baths, the first called S. Vincents, the second, Hally-well, the third, Buxton, the fourth (as in old time we read) Caire Bledd, but now, taking his name of a towne neere adioyning, it is called the Bath. Besides, in this Island are many wonders to be found, which I will not repeate, because I my selfe neuer saw them, and I haue heard of greater.

17041

Euphues and his England.

Concerning their diet in number of dishes, and change of meate, the Nobilitie of England doe exceede most, hauing of all things that either may be bought for money, or gotten for the season. Gentlemen and Marchants feede very finely, and a poore man it is that dineth with one dish, and yet so content with a little, that hauing halfe dined, they say, as it were in a Proverb, that they are as well satisfied as the Lord Mayor of London, whom they thinke to fare best, though he eate not most.

In their meales there is great silence and grauitie, vsing wine rather to ease the stomacke then to loade it, not like vnto other Nations, who neuer thinke that they haue dined vntill they bee drunken.

The attire they vse, is rather ledde by the imitation of others, then their owne inuention, so that there is nothing in England more constant then the inconstancie of attire: now vsing the French fashion, now the Spanish, then the Portugall golwines, then one thing, then another: insomuch, that in drawing of an Englishman, the Painter setteth him downe naked, hauing in one hand a paire of sheeres, in the other, a peece of cloth, who hauing cut his collar after the French guise, is ready to make his sleue after the Barbarian manner. And although this were the greatest enormitie that I could see in England, yet is it to be excused, for they that cannot maintaine this pride, must leaue of necessitie, and they that be able, will leaue when they see the vanitie.

The Lawes they vse are different from ours: for although the common and ciuill Law be not abolished, yet are they not had in so great reputation as their owne common Lawes, which they tearme the Lawes of the Crowne.

The regiment, that they haue, dependeth vpon statute Lawe, and that is by Parliament, which is the highest Court, consisting of thre senerall sorts of people, the Nobilitie, Clergie, and Commons of the Realme: so as whatsoever bee among them enacted, the King striketh the stroke, allowing such thinges as to his Maiestie seemeth best. Then vpon Common Lawe, which standeth vpon Maximes and Principles, peres and tearmes. The cases in this Lawe are called Pleas or Actions, and they are either criminall or ciuill: the meane to determine, are wits, some originall,

Euphues and his England.

originall, some iudiciall : their triall and recoueriss are either by verdict or demur, confession or default, wherein if any fault haue beene committed either in processe or forme, matter or iudgement, the party grieued may haue a writ of errour : Then vpon customa- ble Law, which consisteth vpon laudable customes vsed in some priuate Countrey.

Last of all prescription, which is a certaine custome continued time out of minde, but it is moze particular then their customa- ble Law.

Furtherers and thæues are hanged, Witches burnt, all other villanies that deserue death, punished with death, insomuch that there are very few hainous offences practised, in respect of those that in other Countries are commonly vsed.

Of sauage beasts and vermine they haue no great store, nor any that are noisome. The cattle they keepe for profit, are Oxen, Horses, Sheepe, Goates, Swine, and such like, whereof they haue a- bundance. Wilde fowle and fish they want none, nor any thing that either may serue for pleasure or profit.

They haue moze store of pasture then tillage : their meddowes better then their Cozne-fields, which maketh moze Graziers then Cozne-mongers, yet sufficient store of both.

They excell for one thing, their dogges of all sorts, Spaniels Hounds, Haultifes, and diuers such : the one they keepe for hunt- ing and hauking, the other for necessarie vses about their houses, as to draw water, to watch thæues, &c. And thereof they deriue the word Haultife, of Haul and thæfe.

There is in that Ile, Salt made, and Saffron, there are great Quarries of stone for buildings, sundry minerals of Quicksiluer, Antimony, Sulphur, black Lead, and Oypiment red and yellow. Also, there groweth the finest Allom that is, Vermillion, Witta- men, Chysocola, Copozas, the Minerall stone whereof Petrolum is made, and that which is most strange, the Minerall pearle, which as they are for greatnes and colour most excellet, so are they digged out of the maine land, in places farre distant from the shore. Besides these, though not strange, yet necessary, they haue Cole mines, Salt-peeter for Ordinance, salt sode for glasse.

They want neither Tinne nor Lead, there groweth Iron, Steele,

64.0.21

Euphues and his England.

Steele, and Copper, and what not? So hath God blessed the countrey, as it should seeme, not onely to haue sufficient to serue their owne turnes, but also others necessities, wheresf there was an old saying: All Countreies stand in need of Britaine, and Britaine, of none.

Their aire is very wholsome and pleasant, their ciuility not inferior vnto those that deserue best, their wits very sharpe and quicke, although I haue heard that the Italian and the Frenchman haue accounted them but grosse and dul pated: which I think came not to passe by the proose they made of their wits, but by the English mans report. For this is strange, and yet how true it is there is none that euer trauelled thither but can report, that it is alwaies incident to an Englishman, to thinke worse of his own Nation either in learning, experience, common reason, or wit, preferring alwaies a stranger, rather for the name then the wisdom. I for mine own part, thinke that in all Europe, there are not Lawyers more learned, Diuines more profound, Whiskians more expert, then are in England.

But that which most allureth a stranger, is their courtesie, their ciuilitie, and good entertainment: I speake this by experience, that I found more courtesie in England among those I neuer knew, in one yere, then I haue done in Athens or Italy among those I euer loved in twenty yeres.

But hauing intreated sufficiently of the Countrey and their conditions: let mee come to the glasse I promised, being in the Court: where although I should, as order requireth, begin with the chiefest, yet I am forced with the Painter, to reserue my best colours to end Venus, and to lay the ground with the basest.

First then I must tell you of the graue and wise Counsellours, whose fore-sight in peace warranteth safety in war: whose provision in plenty, maketh sufficient in dearth, whose care in health is as it were a preparatiue against sicknesse: how great their wisdom hath beene in all things, the twenty two yeres peace doth best shew and proue. For what subtilty hath therobeen wrought so closely, what priuy attempts so craftily, what rebellions stirred vp so disorderly, but they haue by pollicy beuoyled, pretended by wisdom, repressed by iustice: What conspiracies abroad, what

Euphues and his England.

What confederacies at home? What iniuries in any place haue at any time beene contrived, the which they haue not either foreseene before it could kindle, or quenched before it could flame?

If any wilie Vlisses should faine madnes, there was amongst them some Palamedes to reueale him: if any Thetis went about to keepe her sonne from the doing of her Countrey seruice, there was also a wise Vlisses in the Court to bewray it. If Sinon came with a smooth tale to bring in the horse into Troy, there hath beene alwaies some contagious Lacaon to thrust his speare against the bowels, which being not bewitched, with Lacaon, hath unfolded that which Lacaon suspected. If Argus, with his hundred eyes, went prying to undermine Iupiter, yet met he with Mercury, who whistled all his eyes out, insonmuch as there could neuer yet any craft preuaile against their pollicy, or any challenge against their courage. Where hath alwaies been Achilles at home to buckle with Hector abroad, Nestors gravity to counteruaile Pryams counsels, Vlisses subtilties to match with Antenors policies, England hath all those that can and haue wrestled with others, whereof we can require no greater proofe then experience.

Besides, they haue all a zealous care for the increasing of true Religion, whose faiths for the most part haue beene tried throught the fire, which they had felt, had they not fled ouer the water.

Moreouer, the great study they bend towards Scholes of learning, doth sufficiently declare, that they are not onely furtherers of learning, but Fathers of the learned. O thrice happy England, where such Counsellors are, where such people liue, where such vertue springeth?

Among these you shall finde Zophirus, that will mangle himselfe to doe his Countrey good, Achates, that will neuer start an inch from his Prince Aeneas, Nauficla, that neuer wanted a shift in his extremitie, Cato that ever counselled vnto the best, Ptholomeus Philodelphus, that alwaies maintained learning. Among the number of all wise, noble, and which Counsellors, I cannot but for his honours sake remember the most prudent and right Honourable, the L. Burleigh, high Treasurer of that Realme, no lesse reuerenced for his wisdom, then renowned for his Office: more loued at home then feared abroad, and yet more feared for

64921

Euphues and his England.

his counsell among other nations, then sword or fire, in whom the saying of Agamemnon may be verified, who rather wished for one such as Nestor, then many such as Ajax.

This Gentleman I found so ready, being but a stranger, to doe me good, that I neither ought to forget him, neither cease to pray for him, that as he hath the wisdome of Nestor, so hee may haue the age: that hauing the pollices of Vlisses, hee may haue his honour, worthy to liue long, by whom so many liue in quiet, and not vnworthy to be aduanced, by whose care so many haue beene preferred.

Is not this a glasse (faire Ladies) for all Countries to behold, where there is not onely an agreement in Faith, Religion, and Counsell, but in frindship, brotherhood, and liuing? By whose good endeauours, vice is punished, vertue rewarded, peace established, foraine broiles repressed, domesticall cares appeased: what Nation can of Counsellors desire more? what Dominion that excepted, hath so much? When neither courage can preuaile against their Chiuallries, nor craft take place against their counsell, nor both ioined in one, be of force to vndermine their Countrie. When you haue dazeled your eies with this glasse, behold heere an other.

It was my fortune to be acquainted with certaine english Gentlemen, which brought me to the Court: where, when I came, I was diuened into a maze to behold the lustie and braue gallants, the beautifull and chaste Ladies, the rare and goodly orders, so as I could not tell whether I should most commend vertue or brauerie. At the last, comming oftner thither then it becomed one of my degree, yet not so often as they desired my company, I began to pry after their manners, and natures, and that which followeth I saw, whereof who so douteth, I will sweare.

The Ladies spend the morning in deuout prayer, not resembling the Gentlewomen in Greece and Italic, who begin their morning at mid-noone, and make their euening at mid-night, vsing Sonnets for Psalmes, and pastimes for prayers, reading the Epistle of a Louer, when they should peruse the Gospell of our Lord, drawing wanton lines when death is before their face, as Archimedes did triangles and circles when the enemy was at his backe. Behold Ladies in this glasse, that the seruice of God is to be preferred

Euphues and his England.

preferred before all things: imitate the English Damosels, who are as cunning in the Scriptures, as you are in Ariosto and Petrarch, or any booke that liketh you best, and becommeth you worst. For bzauerie I cannot say that you exceede them, for certaine it is the most gorgeous Court that euer I haue scene, read, or heard of, but yet doe they not vse their apparell so nicelie as you in Italic, who thinke scoone to kneele at seruice for feare of wrinkles in their fikes, who dare not life vp your heads to heauen, for feare of crumpling the ruffles in your necke: yet your hands (I confesse) are holden vp, rather I thinke to shew your rings, then to manifest your righteousness. The bzauerie they vse, is for the honour of their Prince: the attire you weare, for the alluring of your preie: their rich apparell maketh their beautie more scene, your disguising causeth your faces to bee more suspected. They resemble in their garments the Estridge, who being gazed on, closeth her wings, and hideth her feathers: you in your robes are not vnlike the Peacock, who being praised, spreadeth her taile and belowaieth her pride. Veluets and silkes in them are like golde about a pure Diamond: in you like a greene hedge about a filthie dunghil. Think not Ladies that because you are decked with gold, you are indued with grace: imagine not that shining like the Sunne in earth, ye shall climbe the Sunne in heauen: looke diligentlie into this English glasse, and then shall you see, that the more costlie your apparell is, the greater your courtesie should bee, that you ought to be as farre from pride as you are from pouertie, and as nere to Princes in beautie as you are for brightnesse. Because you are bzaue, disdain not those that are base, thinke with your selues that Kisset coates haue their Christendome, that the sunne when hee is at the highest, shineth as well vpon coarse Carlie as cloth of Tissue, though you haue pearles in your eies, iewels in your breasts, precious stones on your fingers, yet disdain not the stones in the stræte, which although they are nothing so noble, yet are they much more necessarie. Let not your robes hinder your deuotion: learne of the English Ladies, that G D D is worthe to be worshipped with most price, to whom you ought to giue all praise: then shall you bee like starres to the wise, who now are but starcing stocks to the foolish: then shall you be praised of most,

17049

Euphues and his England.

who are now pointed at of all, then shall God beare with your fol-
lie, who now abhorreth your pride.

As the Ladies in this blessed Iland are deuout and bzaue, so are
they chaste and beautiful: insomuch that when I first beheld them,
I could not tell whether some mist had bleared mine eyes, or some
strange inchantment altered my minde: for it may bee, thought
I, that in this Iland, either some Artimodorus or Lisimandio, or
some odde Pigromancer did inhabit, who would shew me faeries,
or the body of Helen, or the new shape of Venus: but coming to
my selfe, and seeing that my senses were not changed, but hindered,
that the place where I stood was no inchaunted Castell, but a gal-
lant Court, I could scarce refraine my voice from crying There is no
beautie but in England.

There did I behold them of pure complexion, exceeding the Lil-
lie and the Rose, of fauour (wherein the chiefeest beautie consisteth)
surpassing the pictures that were fained, or the Magician that would
faine: their eyes piercing like the Sun beames, yet chaste, their
speech pleasant and sweet, yet modest and courteous: their grace
comely, their bodies straight, their hands white, all thinges that
men could wish, or women would haue: which, how much it is,
none can set downe, when as the one desireth as much as may bee,
the other more: And to these beautifull moulds, chaste mindes: to
the comely bodies, temperance, modestie, mildnes, sobrietie: whom
I often beheld merry, yet wise: conferring with Courtiers, yet
warlike: drinking of Wine, yet moderately: eating of delicates,
yet but their eares full: listening to discourses of loue, but not with-
out reasoning of learning: for there it more delighteth them to talke
of Robinhood then to shote in his bowe, and greater pleasure they
take to heare loue, then to be in loue.

Here, Ladies, is a glasse that will make you blush for shame, and
looke pale for anger: their beautie cometh by nature, yours by
Arte: they increase their fauours with faire water, you maintaine
yours with Painters colours: the haire they lay out, groweth vp
on their owne heads, your seemlines hangeth vpon other: theirs
is alwaies in their owne keeping, yours often at the Diars: their
beautie is not lost with a sharpe blast, yours fadeth with a soft
bzeath: not vnlike vnto paper flowers, which bzeake as soone as they

Euphues and his England.

they are touched, resembling the Birds in Egypt called Ibes, who being handled, lose their feathers: or the Serpent Scirapie, which being but toucht with a Snake, bursteth. They vse their beautie because it is commendable, you because you would bee common: they if they haue little, doe not seeke to make it more, but you that haue none, indeuour to bespeake most: if theirs wither by age, they nothing esteeme it, if yours waste by yeeres, you goe about to keepe it: they know that beautie must faile if life continue, you sweare that it shall not faile, if colours last. But to what end, Ladies, doe you alter the gifts of Nature, by the gifts of Art? Is there no colour good but white, no Planet bright but Venus? no linnen faire but Lawne? Why goe you about to make the face faire, by those means that are most foule? A thing loathsome to men, and therefore not louely, horrible before God, and therefore not lawfull.

Haue you not heard that the beautie of the cradle is most brightest: that paintings are for pictures without sense, not for persons with true reason? Follow at the last, Ladies, the gentlewomen of England, who being beautifull, doe those things that shall become so amiable faces: if of an indifferent heu, those thinges as shall make them louely, not adding one ounce to beautie, that may detract a dram from vertue. Besides this, their chastety and temperance is as rare as their beauty: not going in your footsteps, that drinke Wine before you rise to increase your colour, and swill it when you are vp to prouoke your lust: They vse their needle to banish idlenes, not the pen to nourish it, not spending their times in answering the Letters of them that wooe them, but for swearing the company of those that write them, giuing no occasion either by wanton lookes, vnseemly gestures, vnaduised speech, or any vncomely behaviour of likenes or liking. Contrary to the custome of many Countries, where filthy words are accounted to saour of a fine wit, broad speech of of a bold courage, wanton glaunces of a sharpe eye-sight, wicked deeds of a comely gesture, all vaine delights, of a right courteous courtesie.

And yet they are not in England precise, but wary, not disdainfull to conferre, but fearefull to offend: not without reuolse where they perceiue truth, but without replying where they suspect trecherie: when as amongst other Nations, there is no talke so

17041

Euphues and his England.

loathsome to chaste eares, but it is heard with great sport, and answered with great speed. Is it not then a shame, Ladies, that that little Iland should be a mirrour to you, to Europe, to the whole world?

Where is the temperance you professe, when Wine is more common then water? Where, the chastitie, when your lust is thought lawfull? Where the modestie, when your mirth turneth to uncleannesse, uncleannesse to shamelesnesse, shamelesnesse to all sinfulness: Learne Ladies, though late, yet at length, that the chiefest title of honour in earth, is to giue all honour to him that is in heauen, that the greatest brauerie in the world, is to be burning Lampes in the world to come: that the clearest beautie in this life, is to be amiable to him that shall giue eternall: Looks in the Glasse of England, too bright I feare mee for your eies. What is there in your sex that you haue not, and what that you should not haue? They are in prayer deuout, in brauerie humble, in beautie chaste, in feasting temperate, in affection wise, in mirth modest, in all their actions, though courtlie because women, yet Angels because vertuous.

Ah (good Ladies) good I say, for that I loue you, I would you could a little abate that pride of your stomackes, that loosenesse of minde, that licentious behauiour, which I haue seene in you with no small sorrow, and cannot remedie with continuall sighes. They in England pray when you plaie, selue when you sleepe, fast when you feast, and weepe for your sinnes when you laugh at your sensuality. They frequent the Church to serue God, you to see gallants: they decke themselues for cleanlinesse, you for pride: they maintaine their beautie for their owne liking, you for others lust: they refraine wine because they feare to take too much, you because you can take no more. Come Ladies, with teares I call you, looke in this glasse, repent your sinnes past, refraine your present vice, abhorre vanities to come, saie this with one voice, We can see our faulces onely in the English Glasse. A glasse of grace to them of griefe to you, to them in stead of righteousness, to you in place of repentance.

The Lords and Gentlemen in that Court are also an example for all others to follow, true types of nobilitie, the onely staie & staffe

Euphues and his England.

of honour, braue Courtiers, stout Souldiers, apt to reuell in peace, and ride in war. In fight fierce, not dreading death, in friendship firme, not breaking promise: courteous to al that deserue well, cruel to none that deserue ill. Their aduersaries they trust not, that sheweth their wisdom: their enemies they feare not, that argueth their courage. They are not apt to profer iniuries, not fit to take any: loth to pick quarrels, but longing to reuenge them.

Active they bee in all things, whether it bee to worasse in the games of Olimpia, or to fight at Barriers in Palestira, able to carrie as great burthens as Milo, of strength to throw as big stones as Turnus, and what not, that either man hath done or may doe, worthy of such Ladies, and none but they, and Ladies willing to haue such Lords, and none but such. This is a glasse for youth in Grece and Italy: behold it Ladies and Lords all, that either meane to haue piety, vse brauery, increase beauty, or that desire temperancy, chastitie, wit, wisdom, valour, or any thing that may delight your selues, or deserue praise of others.

But another sight there is in my glasse, which maketh me sigh for griefe I cannot shew it, and yet had I rather offend in derogating from my glasse, then my good will. Blessed is that Land that hath all commodities to increase the Common-wealth, happy is that Land that hath wise Counsellors to maintaine it, vertuous Courtiers to beautifie it, noble Gentlemen to aduance it: but to haue such a Prince to gouerne it, as is their Soueraigne Queene, I know not whether I should thinke the people to bee more fortunate or the Prince famous, whether their felicitie bee more to be had in admiration, that haue such a Ruler, or her vertues to bee honoured that hath such royalty, for such is their estate there. that I am enforced to thinke, that euery day is as lucky to the Englishman, as the first day of February hath bene to the Grecians.

But I see you gaze vntill I shew this glasse, which you hauing once seene, will make you giddy: Oh Ladies I know not when to begin, or where to end: for the more I goe about to expresse the brightnes, the more I find mine eies bleared: the nearer I desire to come to it, the further I seeme from it. Not vnlike to Simonides, who being curious to set downe what God was, the more leisure he

64041

Euphues and his England.

he took, the more leath he was to meddle, saying, that in things above reach it was easie to catch a straine, but impossible to touch a starre: and therefore scarce tolerable to point at that, which none can neuer pull at. When Alexander had commanded that none should paint him but Apelles, none carue him but Lysippus, none engrane him but Pergoteles, Pharrasius framed a table squared euery way two hundred foote, which in the borders hee trimmed with fresh colours, and limned with fine gold, leaving all the other room without knot or line: which table he presented to Alexander, who no lesse maruelling at the bignes then at the barenes, demanded to what end he gaue him a frame without face, being so naked, and without fashion, being so great: Pharrasius answered him: Let it be lawfull for Pharrasius, O Alexander, to shew a table wherein hee would paint Alexander, if it were not unlawfull, and for others to square Timber, though Lysippus carue it, and for all to cast Masse, though Pergoteles ingraue it. Alexander perceiuing the good minde of Pharrasius, pardoned his boldnes, and preferred his Arte: yet enquiring why he framed the table so big, hee answered that hee thought that frame to be but little enough for his picture, when the whole world was too little for his person, saying, that Alexander must aswell be praised as painted, and that all his victories and vertues, were not to be dyawne in the compasse of a signet, but in a field.

This answer Alexander both liked and rewarded, inso much as it was lawfull euer after for Pharrasius both to praise that noble King, and to paint him. In like manner I hope, that though it be not requisite, that any should paint their Prince in England, that cannot sufficiently perfect her, yet it shall not be thought rashnes or rudenes, for Euphues to frame a table for Elizabeth, though hee presume not to paint her. Let Apelles shew his fine Arte, Euphues will manifest his faithfull heart: the one can but proue his conceite to blaze his cunning, the other his good will to grinde his colours: he that whetted the tooles is not to be disliked though hee cannot carue the Image: the woman that spinnethe the silke is to be esteemed, though shee cannot worke the sampler: they that sell Timber for ships, are not to be blamed because they cannot build ships. He that carrieth the Porter furthereth the building, though hee be

Euphues and his England:

no expert Mason, he that diggeth the garden is to be considered, though he cannot tread the knots: the Goldsmiths boy must haue his wages for blowing the fire, though he cannot fashion the iewel. Then Ladies I hope poore Euphues shall not bee reuiled though hee deserue not to be rewarded.

I will set downe this Elizabeth as neere as I can: And it may be, that as the Venus of Apelles not finished, the Tindarides of Nicomachus not ended, the Medea of Timomachus not perfected, the table of Pharrasius, not couloured, brought greater desire to them to consummate them, and to others to see them: so the Elizabeth of Euphues being but shadowed for others to varnish, but begunne for others to end, but drawne with a blacke coale for others to blaze with a bright colour, may worke either a desire in Euphues hereafter if he liue to end it, or a minde in those that are better able to amend it, or in all, if none can worke it, a wil to wish it. In the mean season, I say as Xcuxes did, when he had drawne the picture of Atlanta, Hope will enuy mee then imitate me, and not commend it, though they cannot amend it: But I come to my England.

There was for a long time ciuill warres in the Country, by reason of seuerall claimes to the Crowne, betwene the two famous and noble houses of Lancaster and Yorke, either of them pretending to be of the Royall blood, which caused them both to spend their vitall blood: these iarrs continued long, not without great losse, both to the nobilitie and communaltie, who ioyning not in one, but diuers parts, turned the Realme to great ruine, hauing almost destroyed their Country before they could annoint a King. But the liuing God, who was loth to oppresse England, at last began to repress iniuries, and to giue an end by mercy, to those that could find no end of malice, nor looke for any end of mischief. So tender a care hath he alwaies had of that England, as of a new Israel, his chosen and beloued people.

This peace began by a marriage solemnized by Gods speciall prouidence, betwene Henry Earle of Richmond, heire of the house of Lancaster, and Elizabeth daughter of Edward the fourth, the vndoubted issue and heire of the house of Yorke: whereby (as they tearme it) the red Rose and the white were vnited and ioyned together. Out of these Roses sprang two noble buddees, Prince Ar-

17041

Euphues and his England.

thur and Henry the eldest dying without issue, the other of most famous memory, leaving behind him three children, Prince Edward, the Lady Mary, the Lady Elizabeth: King Edward lived not long, which could never for that Realme haue lived too long, but sharpe frosts bite forward springs, Easterly winds blaste towardly blossoms, cruell death spareth not those whom we our selues living cannot spare.

The eldest sister the Princesse Mary, succeeded as next heire to the Crowne, and as it chaunced next heire to the graue, touching whose life I can say little, because I was scarce borne, and what others say, of me shall be for borne.

This Quene being diseased, Elizabeth being of the age of twentie two yeeres, of more beauty then honour, and yet of more honour then any earthly creature, was called from a prisoner to a Prince: from the Castle, to the Crowne; from the feare of loosing her head, to bee supreme head. And heere, Ladies, it may be you will moue a question, why this noble Ladie was either in danger of death, or cause of distresse, which had you thought to haue passed in silence, I would notwithstanding haue reuealed. This Lady, all the time of her sisters raigne, was kept close, as one that tendered not those proceedings which were contrarie to her conscience: who hauing diuerse enemies, endured many crosses, but so patiently, as in her deepest sorrow, she would rather sigh for the liberty of the Gospel, then her owne freedome. Suffering her inferiours to triumph ouer her; her foes to threaten her; her dissembling friends to vndermine her; learning in all this miserie only the patience that Zeno taught Ereticus, to heare and forbear, neuer seeking reuenge, but with good Licurgus to loose her owne eie, rather then to hurt an others eie. But being now placed in the seate Royall, shee first of all established Religion, banished Popery, aduanced the Word that before was so much defaced, who hauing in her hand the sword to reuenge, vsed rather bountifully to reward: being as farre from rigour when shee might haue killed, as her enemies were from honesty when they could not, giuing a generall pardon, when shee had cause to vse particular punishments, preferring the name of pittie before the remembrance of perils, thinking no reuenge more princely, then to spare when she might spill, to stay when shee might strike

Euphues and his England.

strike : to proffer to save with mercie, when she might have destroyed with iustice. Where is the clemencie worthy commendation and admiration, nothing inferior to the gentle disposition of Aristides, who after his exile, did not so much as note them that banished him, saying with Alexander, that there can be nothing more noble, then to doe well to those that deserve ill.

This mightie and mercifull Quene, hauing many bills of priuate persons that sought before time to betray her, burnt them all, resembling Iulius Caesar, who being presented with the like complaints of the Commons, threw them into the fire, saying, that hee had rather not know the names of Rebels, then haue occasion to reuenge, thinking it better to be ignorant of those that hated him, then to be angry with them.

This clemencie did her Maiestie not onely shew at her coming to the Crowne, but also throughout her whole gouernment, when she had spared to shed their bloods that sought to spill hers, not racking the Lawes to extremitie, but mitigating the rigour with mercie : insomuch as it may bee said of that royall Monarch, as it was of Antonius, surnamed the godly Empero, who reigned many yeeres without the effusion of blood. What greater vertue can there be in a Prince then mercie ? What greater praise then to abate the edge which she should whet, to pardon where she should punish, and to reward where she should reuenge ?

I my selfe being in England, when her Maiestie was for her recreation in her Barge vpon the Thames, heard of a Gunne that was shot off, though of the partie unwittinglie, yet to her noble person dangerously : which fact she most graciously pardoned, accepting iust excuse before a great amends, taking more griefe for her poore Barge-man that was a little hurt, then care for her selfe that was in greatest hazard : A rare example of pitie, A singular spectacle of pietie.

Diuers besides there haue bene, which by priuate conspiracies, open rebellions, close wiles, cruell witchcraftes, haue sought to end her life which saueeth all their liues : whose practises, by the diuine prouidence of the Almighty, haue euer bene disclosed, insomuch that hee hath kept her safe in the Whales bellie, when her subiects went about to throw her into the sea : preserved her in the

17041

Euphues and his England.

hotte Duen, when her enemies increase the fire, not suffering a haire to fall from her, much lesse any harme to fasten vpon her.

These iniuries and treasons of her subiectes, these policies and vndermining of foraine Nations, so little moued her, that shee would often saie, Let them know that though it bee not lawfull for them to speake what they list, yet it is lawfull for vs to doe with them what we list: being alwaies of that mercifull minde which was in Theodosius, who wished rather that hee might call the dead to life, then put the liuing to death: saying with Augustus, when shee should set her hand to any condemnation, I would to God we could not write. Infinite were the examples that might be alleadged, and almost incredible, whereby shee hath shewed her selfe a Lambe in meekenesse, when shee had cause to bee a Lyon in might, proued a Dove in fauour, when shee was prouoked to be an Eagle in fierceness, requiting iniuries with benefites, reuenging grudges with gifts, in highest Maiestie bearing the lowest minde, forgiving all that sued for mercie, and forgetting all that deserued iustice. O diuine nature, O heauenlie nobilitie, what thing can bee more required in a Prince, then in greatest power to shewe greatest patient, in chiefest glorie to bring forth chiefest grace, in abundance of all earthly felicitie, to manifest abundance of heauenlie pietie? O fortunate England, that hath such a Quene, vngatefull if you pray not for her, wicked if you doe not loue her, miserable if you loose her.

Here Ladies is a glasse for all Princes to behold, that being called to dignitie, they vse moderation not might, tempering the seueritie of the lawes with the mildnes of loue, not executing all their will, but shewing what they may. Happy are they, and onely they that are vnder this glorious and gracious Soueraigne, in so much that I account all those abiects that be not her subiects.

But why doe I tread still in one path, when I haue so large a field to walke: or linger about one flower, when I haue manie to gather: wherein I resemble those that being delighted with the little brooke, neglect the fountaine head: or the Painter that being curious to colour Cupids bowe, forgot to paint the string.

As this noble Prince is indued with mercie, patience, and moderation, so is he indued with singular beauty and chastitie, excell-

Euphues and his England.

ling in the one Venus, in the other Vesta. Who knoweth not how rare a thing it is (Ladies) to match Virginitie with beautie, a chaste minde with an amiable face, diuine cogitations with a comely countenance? But such is the grace bestowed vpon this earthly Goddess, that hauing the beauty that might allure all princes, shee hath the chastitie also to refuse all, accounting it no lesse praise to bee called a Virgine, then to be esteemed a Venus: thinking it as great honour to bee found chaste, as thought amiable. Where is now Electra, the chaste daughter of Agamemnon? Where is Lala, that renowned Virgine? Where is Acmillia, that through her chastity wrought wonders, in maintaining continuall fire at the Altar of Vesta? Where is Claudia, that to manifest her Virginitie, set the ship on flote with her finger, that multitudes could not remoue by force? Where is Tuleia, one of the same order that brought to passe no lesse maruels by carrying water in a Sieue, not shedding one drop, from Tyber to the Temple of Vesta? If Virginitie haue such force, then what hath this chaste Virgine Elizabeth done? who by the space of twenty and odde yeeres, with continuall peach against all polices, with miracles contrary to all hope, hath gouerned that noble Island. Against whom, neither forraigne force, nor ciuill fraude, neither discorde at home, nor conspiracies abroad could preuaile.

What greater maruell hath happened since the beginning of the world, then for a yong and tender maiden to gouerne strong and valiant men? then for a Virgine to make the whole world, if not to stand in awe of her, yet to honour her: yea, and to liue in spite of all those that spite her, with her sword in the sheath, with her Armour in the Tower, with her souldiers in their gownes? Inso- much as her peace may bee called more blessed then the quiet raigne of Numa Pompilius, in whose gouernment the Bees haue made their Hives in the souldiers helmets. Now is the Temple of Ianus remoued from Rome to England, whose doores haue not been opened this 20. yeeres: more be to maruelled at then the regiment of Deborah, who ruled 20. yeeres with religion: or Semiramis, that ruled long with power: or Zenobia, that raigned 6. yeeres in prosperity. This is the onely miracle that Virginitie euer wrought, for a little Island inuironed round about with wars, to stand in peace, for the

17041

Euphues and his England.

walles of France to burne, and the houses of England to freeze, for all other Nations, either with ciuill sword to bee diuided, or with forraigne foes to be inuaded, and that Countre neither to be molested with boyles in their owne bosoms, nor threatened with blast of other borders: but alwaies though not laughing, yet looking thorough an Emerald at others iarres.

Their fields haue bene sowne with corne, strangers their pitched with Campes: they haue their men reaping their harvest, when others are mustering in their harnessse: they vse their peeces to sowle for pleasure, others their Caliuers for feare of perils. O blessed peace, O happie Prince, O fortunate people. The liuing God is onely the English God, where hee hath placed peace, which bringeth all plentie, annointed a Virgine Quene, which with a wand ruleth her owne subiects, and with her worthines winneth the good will of strangers: so that she is no lesse gracious among her owne, then glorious to others, no lesse loued of her people then marvelled at of other Nations.

This is the blessing that Christ alwaies gaue to his people, peace. This is the curse that he giueth to the wicked, there shall be no peace to the vngodly. This was onely the salutation hee vsed to his Disciples: Peace bee vnto you: And therefore is hee called the God of loue and peace in holy writ.

In peace was the Temple of the Lord built by Salomon: Christ would not be borne vntill there were peace through out the whole world, this was the only thing that Ezechias prayed for: Let there be truth and peace O Lord in my daies. All which examples doe manifestly proue, that there can bee nothing moze notable then peace.

This peace hath the Lord continued with great and vspeakable goodnesse among his chosen people of England. How much is that Nation bound to such a Prince, by whom they enioy all benefits of peace, hauing their Barnes full, when others famish, their Coffers stuffed with gold, when others haue no siluer, their wiues without danger when others are defamed, their daughters chaste when others are deflowred, their houses furnished, when others are ficed, where they haue all things for superfluitie, others nothing to sustaine their need.

This

Euphues and his England.

This peace hath God giuen for her vertues, pittie, moderation, virginittie: which peace, the same God of peace continue for his names sake.

TDuching the beauty of his Prince, her countenance, her maiestie, her personage, I cannot thinke that it may be sufficiently commended, when it cannot be too much maruelled at: so that I am constrained to say, as Praxitiles did when he began to paint Venus and her Sonne, who doubted whether the world could asoord colours good inough for two such faire faces: and I whether my tongue can yeeld words to blaze that beauty, the perfection whereof none can imagine. Which seeing it is so, I must do like those that want a cleere sight, who being not able to discern the Sun in the skie, are inforced to behold it in the water. Zeuxis hauing before him fifty faire Virgins of Sparta, whereby to draw one amiable Venus, said, that fifty more fairer then those could not minister sufficient beauty, to shew the Goddesse of beauty: therefore being in dispaire either by Art to shadow her, or by imagination to comprehend her, he drew in a Table a faire Temple, the gates open, and Venus going in, so as nothing could be perceiued but her back, where in hee vsed such cunning, that Apelles himselfe seeing this worke, wished that Venus would turne her face, saying: that if it were in all parts agreeable to the backe, hee would become an Apprentise to Zeuxis, and slave to Venus. In the like manner saith it with me, for hauing all the Ladies in Italy, more then fiftie hundred, whereby to colour Elizabeth, I must say with Zeuxis, that as many more will not suffice, and therefore in as great an agony paint her Court with her backe towards you, for that I cannot by Arte portray her beauty: wherein though I want the skill to doe it as Zeuxis did, yet biewing it narrowly, and comparing it wisely, you will say, that if her face be answerable to her backe, you will like my handy craft and become her Handmaides. In the meane season I leaue you gasing vntill she turne her face, imagining her to be such a one as Nature framed, to that end that no Art should immitate, wherein shee hath prooued her selfe to bee exquisite, and Painters to be Apes.

This beautifull mould when I beheld to be indued with chastitie,

12071

Euphues and his England.

tie, temperance, mildnesse, and all other good gifts of Nature (as heereafter shall appeare) when I saw her to surpasse all in beauty, and yet a Virgine, to excell all in pietie, and yet a Prince; to be inferiour to none in all the lineaments of the body, and yet superiour to euery one in all the gifts of the minde: I began thus to pray, that as shee hath liued fortye yeeres a Virgine in great Maiestie, so shee may liue fourescore yeeres a Mother with great ioy: that as with her we haue had long time peace and plenty, so by her we euer may haue quietnes and abundance, wishing this euen from the bottom of a heart that wisheth well to England, though fareth ill, that either the world may end befoze she die, or shee liue to see her Childrens Children in the world: otherwise how tickle their state is that now triumph, vpon what a twist they hange that are in honoz, they that liue shall see, which I to thinke on, sigh. But God for his mercies sake, Christ for his merits sake, the holie Ghost for his names sake, grant to that Realme, comfort without any ill chaunce, that the longer she liueth, the sweeter shee may smell, like vnto the bird Ibis; that she may be triumphant in victozies like the Palme tree; fruitfull in her age like the Vine, in all ages prosperous, to all men gracious, in all places glorious: so that there be no end of her praises, vntill the end of all flesh.

Thus did I often talke with my selfe, and wish with my whole heart. What should I talke of her sharpe wit, excellent wisdom, exquisite learning, and all other qualities of the minde, wherein shee seemeth so farre to excell those that haue beene accounted singular, as the learned haue surpased those that haue beene thought simple?

In questioning, not inferiour to Nicaulia the Queene of Saba, that did put so many hard doubts to Salomon: equall to Nicostreta in the Greeke tongue, who was thought to giue precepts for the better perfection: more learned in the Latine then Accalalunta: passing Aspasia in Philosophie, who taught Pericles: exceeding in iudgement Themistocles, who instructed Pithagoras. Adde to these qualities those that none haue had, the French tongue, the Spanish, the Italian, not meane in euery one, but excellent in all, readier to correct escapes in those languages then to bee controuled, fitter to teach others then to learne of any: more able to adde new rules,

Euphues and his England.

rules, then to erre in the old. Inſomuch as there is no Embaſſadoꝝ that cometh into her Court, but ſhee is willing and able both to vnderſtand his meſſage, and vtter her minde : not like vnto the Kings of Aſiria, who anſwer Embaſſages by meſſengers, while they themſelues either dally in ſinne, or ſnoꝛt in ſleepe. Her godly zeale to learning, with her great ſkill, hath bene ſo manifeſtly ap- prooued, that I cannot tell whether ſhee deſerue moꝛe honoꝛ foꝛ her knowledge, or adimication foꝛ her courteſie, who in great pompe hath twice directed her progreſſe vnto the Vniuerſities : with no leſſe ioy to the Students, then gloꝛy to the State : where after long and ſolemnne diſputations in the Law, Phiſicke, and Diuinitie, not as one wearied with Schollers arguments, but wedded to their Di- rations, when euery one feared to offend in length, ſhe in her owne perſon, with no leſſe praiſe to her Maieſty, then delight to her Sub- iects, with a wiſe and learned concluſion, both gaue them thanks, and put her ſelfe to very great paines.

A noble patterne of a princely minde, not like vnto the Kings of Perſia, who in their Progꝛeſſes did nothing elſe but cut ſticks to dꝛiu away the time, noꝛ like the delicate liues of the Sibarites, who would not admit any Arte to bee exerciſed within their Citie that might make the leſt noiſe. Her wit ſo ſharp, that if I ſhould repeat the apt anſwers, the ſubtill queſtions, the fine ſpeeches, the pithy ſenten- ces, which on the ſudden ſhe hath vttered, they would rather breed admiration then credit.

But ſuch are the gifts that the liuing God hath endued her with, all, that looke in what Arte or Language, wit, or learning vertue, or beauty, any one hath particularly excelled moſt, ſhee onely hath generally exceeded euery one in all: inſomuch that there is nothing to be added, that either men would wiſh in a woman, or God doth giue to a creature.

I let paſſe her ſkill in Muſicke, her knowledge in all the other Sciences, when as I feare, leſt by my ſimplicity, I ſhould make them leſſe then they are, in ſeeking to ſheiw how great they are, vn- leſſe I were praiſing her in the Gallery of Olimpia, where giuing ſooꝛth one woꝛd I might heare ſeuen.

But all theſe graces, although they bee to bee wondꝛed at, yet her politicke government, her prudent Counſell, her zeale to

Do

Religion

17041

Euphues and his England.

Religion, her clemency to those that submit, her stoutnes to those that threaten, so farre excede all other vertues, that they are more easie to be maruelled at, then imitated.

Fine and twenty yeeres hath shee borne the Sword, with such iustice, that neither offenders could complaine of rigour, nor the Innocent of wrong : yet so tempered with mercy, as malefactors haue beene sometimes pardoned vpon hope of grace, and the iniury requited to ease their grieffe : insomuch that in the whole course of her glorious raigne, it could neuer be said, that either the poore were oppressed without remedy, or the guilty repressed without cause : bearing this ingrauen in her noble heart, that iustice without mercie, were extreame iniurie : and pitie without equitie, plaine partiality : and that it is as great tyzanny not to mitigate Lawes, as iniquity to breake them.

Her care for the flourishing of the Gospell, hath well appeared, when as neither the curses of the Pope, (which are blessings to good people, nor the threatnings of Kings, which are perilous to a Prince) nor the perswasions of Papists (which are honey to the mouth) could either feare her, or allure her to violate the holy league contracted with Christ, or to maculate the blood of the ancient Lambe, which is Christ. But alwaies constant in the true faith, she hath to the exceeding ioy of her Subiects, to the unspeakeable comfort of her soule, to the great glory of God, established that Religion, the maintenance wherof shee seeketh rather to confirme by fortitude, then leaue off for feare, knowing that there is nothing that smelleth sweeter vnto the Lord, then a sound spirit, which neither the boasts of the vngodly, nor the horrour of death can either remoue or moue.

This Gospell with inuincible courage, with rare constancy, with hote zeale she hath maintained in her owne Countries without change, and defenced against all kingdoms that sought change : insomuch that all Nations round about her, threatening alteration, shaking Swords, throwing fire, menacing famine, murther, destruction, desolation, she onely hath stood like a Lambe, on the top of a hill, not fearing the blasts of the sharpe winds, but trusting in his prouidence that rideth vpon the winges of the foure winds. Next followeth the loue shee beareth to her Subiects, who

Euphues and his England.

no lesse tendreth them then the apple of her owne eie, shewing her selfe a louing Mother vnto the afflicted, a Physitian vnto the sicke, a soueraigne and milde Gouvernesse to all. Touching her Magnanimittie, her Maiestie, her estate royall, there was neither Alexander, no Galba the Emperour, no any that might bee compared with her.

This is she, that resembling the noble Queene of Nauarre, vseth the Parigold for her flowre, which at the rising of the Sun openeth her leaues, and at the setting shutteth them, referring all her actions and induozs to him that ruleth the Sunne. This is that Celer that first bound the Crocodile to the Palme tree, brydling those that sought to reigne her: This is that good Pellican, that to feede her people spareth not to rend her owne person: This is that mightie Eagle that hath throwne dust into the eies of the heart that went about to worke destruction to her subiects: into whose wings although the blind Beetle would haue crept, and so being carried into her nest destroyed her young ones, yet hath shee with the vertue of her feathers consumed that flie in his owne fraud.

Shee hath exiled the Swallow that sought to spoile the Grasshopper, and giuen bitter Almonds to the rauinous Wolues, that endeouored to deuour the fillie Lambes, burning euen with the breath of her mouth, like the princely Stagge, the Serpents that were engendered by the breath of the huge Elephant, so that now all her enemies are as whist as the bird Attagen, who neuer singeth any tune after she is taken, no they being so ouertaken.

But whither doe I wade Ladies, as one forgetting himselfe, thinking to sound the depth of her vertues with a felwe fadomes, when there is no bottome: for I know not how it cometh to passe, that being in this Labyrinth, I may sooner lose my selfe then finde the end.

Behold Ladies, in this glasse, a Queene, a woman, a Virgin, in in all gifts of the body, in all graces of the minde, in all perfection of either, so far to excell all men, that I know not whether I may thinke the place too bad for her to dwell among men.

To talke of other things in that Court, were to bring Eggs after Apples, or after the setting out of the Sunne, to tell a tale of a

17049

Euphues and his England.

Shadow. But this I say, that all Offices are looked too with great care : and vertue is embraced of all, vice hated, Religion daily increased, manners reformed, that who seeth the place there, will thinke it rather a Church for diuine seruice, then a Court for a Princes delight.

This is the Classe, Ladies, wherein I would haue you gaze, wherein I tooke my whole delight: imitate the Ladies in England, amend your manners, rub out the wrinkles of the mind, and be not curious about the weams in the face. As for their Elizabeth, sith ye can neither sufficiently maruell at her, nor I praise her, let vs all pray for her, which is the onely dutie we can performe, and the greatest that we can proffer.

Yours to command, Euphues.

IOVIS ELIZABETH.

PA'las, Iuno, Venus, cum Nympham numine plenam,
Spectarunt, nostra hæc, quæque triumphat, erit.
Contendunt auide, sic tandem regia Iuno,
Est mea, de magnis stemma petiuit auis.
Hoc leue (nec sperno tantorum insignia patrum)
Ingenio pollet, dos mea, Pallas ait.
Dulce Venus risit, vultusque in lumina fixit,
Hæc mea dixit erit, nam quod ametur habet,
Iudicio Paridis, cum sit prælara venustas :
Ingenium Pallas? Iuno quid virgit auos?
Hæc Venus : impatiens, veteris Saturnia damni,
Arbiter in cœlis non Paris inquit erit.
Intumuit Pallas nunquam passura priorem,
Priamedes Helenam, dixit adulter amet.
Risit, & erubuit, mixto Cytherea colore,
Iudicium dixit Iupiter ipse serat.
Assensere, Iouem, compellant vocibus ultro,
Incipit affari regia Iuno Iouem.
Iupiter, Elizabeth vestras si venit ad aures.
(Quam certe omnino cœlica turba stupent)

Hanc

Euphues and his England.

Hanc propriam, & merito semper vlt esse Nonarchum,

Quæque suam namque est, pulchra, deserta, potens.

Quod pulchra, est Veneris, quod polleat arte, Minerua,

Quod Princeps, Nympham, quis negat esse meam?

Arbiter istius, modo vis, cert animis esto.

Sin minus, est nullum lis habitura modum.

Obstupet Omnipotens durum est quod poscitis, inquit,

Est tamen arbitrio res peragenda meo.

Tu soror & coniux Iuno, tu filia Pallas,

Es quoque, quid similem? ter mihi chara Venus.

Non tua, da veniam Iuno, nec Palladis illa est,

Nec veneris, credas hoc, licet alma Venus,

Hæc Iuno, hæc Pallas, Venus hæc, & quæque Dearum.

Diuisum Elizabeth cum Ioue numen habet.

Ergo quid obstrepitis? frustra contenditis inquit,

Vltima vox hæc est, Elizabetha mea est,

Euphues

Est Iouis Elizabeth, nec quid Ioue maius habendum,

Et Ioue teste Ioui est Iuno, Minerua Venus.

THese Verses Euphues sent also vnder his Classe, which ha-
uing once finished, hee gaue himselfe to his Booke, determi-
ning to end his life in Athens, although hee had a moneths
minde to England: who at all times, and in all companies,
was no niggard of his good speech to that nation, as one willing to
liue in that Court, and wedded to the maners of that Country. It
chaunced, that being in Athens not passing one quarter of a yeere,
he receiued Letters out of England from Philautus, which I thought
necessarie also to insert, that I might giue some end to the matters
of England, which at Euphues departure were but rawly left. And
thus they follow.

Philautus to his owne Euphues.

IHaue oftentimes, Euphues, since thy departure, complained of
the distance of place, that I am so far from thee: of the length of
time

17041

Euphues and his England.

time that I could not heare of thee, of the spite of Fortune that I might not send to thee: but time at length, and not too late, because at last, it hath recompensed the iniuries of all, offered me both a conuenient messenger by whom to send, and strang newes whereof to write.

Thou knowest how forward matters went, when thou takest ship, and thou wouldest maruell to heare how forward they were before thou strookest saile: for I had not bene long in London, sure I am thou wast not then at Athens, when as the coyne which was greene in the blade, began to wax ripe in the eare, when the seeds which I scarce thought to haue taken roote, began to spring, when the loue of Surius, which hardly I would haue ghesse'd to haue a blossom, shewed a bud. But so unkind a yeere hath it bene in England, that we felt the heate of the Sommer, before wee could discern the temperature of the Spring, insomuch that wee were ready to make May, before we could moue grasse, hauing in effect the Ides of May, before the Calends of March: which seeing it is so forward in these things, I maruelled the lesse to see it so readie in matters of loue, where oftentimes they clap their handes before they know the bargaine, and seale the Obligation before they read the Condition.

At my being at the house of Camilla, it happened I found Surius accompanied with two Knights, and the Lady Flauia with three other Ladies: drew backe, as one somewhat shame-fast, when I was willed to draw neere, as one that was wished for. Who thinking of nothing lesse then to heare a contract for mariage, where I onely expected a conceit of mirth, I sodainely, yet solemnly, heard those wordes of assurance betwene Surius and Camilla, in the which I had rather haue bene a partie then a witnesse. I was not a little amazed to see them strike the Iron which I thought colde, and to make an end before I could heare a beginning. When they saw me as it were in a trance, Surius taking me by the hand, began thus to tell.

Pompeius Philautus, to see Camilla and mee to bee assured, not that you doubted it unlikely to come to passe, but that you were ignorant of the practises, thinking the Diall to stand still, because you cannot perceine it to moue. But had you bene prying to all
proues,

Euphues and his England.

prooves, both of her good meaning towards me, and of my good wil towards her, you would rather haue thought great hast to be made, then long deliberation. For this vnderstand, that my friends are vnwilling that I should match so low, not knowing that loue thinketh the Juniper shrubbe to bee as high as the tall Dakes, or the Ringhtingales laies to bee more precious then the Estridges feathers, or the Larke that breedeth in the ground to be better then the Hobby that mounteth to the clouds. I haue alwaies hitherto preferred beauty before riches, and honesty before blood, knowing that birth is the praise we receiue of our Ancestors, honestie the renown we leaue to our successors: and of two brittle goods, riches, and beauty, I had rather chuse that which might delight mee, then destroy mee.

Wade marriages by friends, how dangerous they haue bene I know not, Philautus, and some present haue proued, which can bee likned to nothing els so well, then as if a man should be constrained to pull on a shooe by anothers last, not by the length of his owne foot: which being too little, wrings him that wears it, not him that made it: if too big, shameth him that hath it, not him that gaue it. In meates I loue to carue where I like, and in mariage, shall I be carued where I like not? I had as leaue another should take measure by his backe of my apparell, as appoint what wife I should haue by his minde.

In the choice of a wife, sundry men are of sundry minds, one looketh high as one that feareth no chips, saying, that the oyle that swimmeth on the top is the wholesomest: an other pozing on the ground, as dreading all dangers that happen in great stocks, altogether, that the hony that lieth in the bottome is the sweetest. I assent to neither, as one willing to follow the mean, thinking the wine which is in the midst to be the finest. What I might therefore match to mine owne minde, I haue chosen Camilla, a Virgine of no noble race, nor yet the childe of a base father, but betweene both, a Gentlewoman of an ancient and worshipfull house, in beauty inferiour to none, in vertue superiour to a number.

Long time we loued, but neither durst shew manifest her affection because I was Noble; nor I vtter mine, for feare of offence; seeing in her alwaies a minde more willing to carle Toyes before
Vesta

Euphues and his England.

Vesta, then Tapers before Iuno. But as fire when it bursteth out catcheth hold soonest of the driest wood, so loue when it is revealed, fastneth easiest vpon the affectionate will : which came to passe in both of vs : for talking of loue, of his lawes, of his delights, toyments, and all other branches, I could neither so dissemble my liking, but that she espied it, whereat she began to sigh : or she so cloake her loue, but that I perceiued it, whereat she began to blush : at the last, though long time straining courtesie who should goe ouer the stile, when we had both haste, I, (for that I knew women would rather die then seeme to desire) began first to vnfold the extremities of my passions, the causes of my loue, the constancie of my faith, the which she knowing to bee true, easilie beleeued, and replied in the like manner, which I thought not certaine, not that I misdoubted her faith, but that I could not perswade my selfe of so good fortune.

Having thus made each other priue to our wished desires, I frequented more often to Camilla, which caused my friends to suspect that, which now they shall find true: and this was the cause that we all meete heere, that before this good company we might knit that knot with our tongues, that we shall neuer vndoe with our teeth.

This was Surius speech vnto me, which Camilla with the rest affirmed. But I, Euphues, in whose heart the stumps of loue were yet sticking, began to change colour, feeling as it were new stornies to arise after a pleasant calme : but thinking with my selfe that the time past to wooe her that another was to wed, I digested the pill which had almost choakt mee. But time caused mee to sing a new tune, as after thou shalt heare.

After much talke and great chere, I taking my leaue, departed, being willing to visite the Lady Flauia at my leasure, which word was to me in stead of a welcome.

Within a while after it was noised that Surius was assured to Camilla, which bred quarrels, but hee like a Noble Gentleman, reioicing more in his loue, then esteeming the losse of his friends, murther them all, was married, not in a Chamber privately, as one fearing tumults, but openly in the Church, as one ready to answer any objections.

This

Euphues and his England.

This marriage solemnized could not be recalled, which caused his Allies to consent: and so all parts pleased, I thinke them the happiest couple in the world.

Now, Euphues, thou shalt vnderstand, that all hope being cut off from obtaining Camilla, I began to vse the aduantage of the word that Lady Flauia cast out, whom I visited more like a sojourner then a stranger, being absent at no time from breakefaste till euening.

Dyasse was mine errand, but drinke I would: my great curtesie was to excuse my grieuous toyments: for I ceased not continually to court my Violet, whom I neuer found so coy as I thought, nor so curteous as I wished. At the last thinking not to spend all my wooing in signes, I fell to flat saying: reuealing the bitter sweets that I sustained, the ioy at her presence, the grieue at her absence, with all speeches that a Louer might frame: shee not degenerating from the wiles of a woman, seemed to accuse men of inconstancie, that their painted words were but wind, that fained sighs were but sleights, that all their lone was but to laugh, laying baits to catch the fish that they meant againe to throw into the Riuer, practising onely cunning to deceiue, not courtesie to tell truth: wherein shee compared all Louers to Mizaldos, the Poet, which was so light, that euery wind would blow him away, vnlesse he had Lead tied to his heeles: and to the fugitiue stone in Cicico, which runneth away if it be not fastened to some poste. Thus would shee dally, a wench euermore giuen to such disport: I answered for my selfe, as I could, and for all men as I thought.

Thus oftentimes had we conference, but no conclusion, many meetings, but few pastimes, vntill at the last, Surius, one that could quickly perceiue on which side my bread was buttered, began to breake with me touching Fraunces, not as though he had heard any thing, but as one that would vnderstand something. I durst not seem strange when I found him so courteous, knowing that in this matter he might almost worke all my liking.

I vnfolded to him from time to time the whole discourse I had with my Violet, my earnest desire to obtaine her, my lands, goods, and reuenues: who hearing my tale, promised to further my sute wherein hee so bestirred his study, that within one moneth I was

17079

Euphues and his England.

in possibilitie to haue her I most wished and least looked for.

It were too too long to write an History, being but determined to send a Letter : therefore I will deferre all the actions and accidents that happened, vntill occasion shall serue either to meete thee, or minister leasure to mee. To this end it grew, that conditions were made for the performace of a certaine Joynter (for the which I had many Italians bonds) we were both made as sure as Surius and Camilla.

Her dowry was in ready money a thousand pounds, and a faire house wherein I meane shortly to dwell. The Joynter I must make, is foure hundred pound yeerly, the which I must heere purchase in England, and sell my lands in Italy.

Now, Euphues, imagine with thy selfe, that Philautus beginneth to change: although in one yeere to marry and to thriue, it be hard. But would I might once againe see thee heere, vnto whom thou shalt be no lesse welcome then to thy best friend.

Surius, that noble Gentleman commendeth him vnto thee, Camilla forgetteth thee not : both earnestly wish thy returne, with great promises to doe thee good, whether thou wish it in the Court or in the Countrey : this I durst sweare, that if thou come againe into England, thou wilt be so friendly intreated, that either thou wilt altogether dwell heere, or tarie heere longer.

The Lady Flauia saluteth thee, and also my Violet : euery one wisheth thee so well, that thou canst wish thy selfe no better. Other newes there is none, but that which little apertaineth to mee, and nothing vnto thee. Two requests I am to make, as well from Surius as my selfe, the one to come into England, the other to heare thine answer. And thus in haste I bid you farewell. From London the first of February. 1579.

Thine, or not his owne,

Philautus.

This Letter being deliuered to Euphues, and well perused, caused him both to maruell and to ioy, seeing all things so strangely concluded, and his friend so happily contracted : hauing therefore by the same meanes opportunity to send answere, by the which hee had pleasure to receiue newes, he dispatched his letter in this forme.

Euphues

Euphues and his England.

Euphues to Philautus.

There could nothing haue come out of England to Euphues, more welcome then thy Letters, vnlesse it had bene thy person: which when I had thoroughly perused, I could not at the first either beleue them for the strangenesse, or at the last for the happines: for vpon the suddaine to heare such alterations of Surius, passed all credite, and to vnderstand so fortunate successe to Philautus, all expectation: yet considering that many things fall betweene the cup and the lippe, that in one lucky houre more rare things come to passe, then sometimes in seuen yeeres, that marriages are made in heauen, though consummated in earth, I was brought both to beleue the euent, and to allow them. Touching Surius and Camilla, there is no doubt but that they both will liue well in marriage, who loued so well before their matching: and in my minde he dealt both wisely & honozably, to prefer vertue before vaine glozy, and the goodly ornaments of vertue before the rich armour of nobility: for this must we all thinke (how well soeuer wee thinke of our selues) that vertue is most noble, by the which men became first noble. As for thine owne estate, I will bee bold to counsell thee, knowing it neuer to be more necessarie to vse aduice then in marriage. Solon gaue counsell, that before one assured himselfe, hee should bee so warie, that in tying himselfe fast, he did not vndoe himselfe, wishing them first to eat a Quince peate, that is, to haue a sweet conference without brawles; then salt, to be wise without boasting. In Boetia they couered the Bride with Asparagonia, the nature of which plant is to bring sweet fruit out of a sharpe thorne: whereby they noted, that although the virgin were somewhat shrewish at the first, yet in time she might become a sheep. Therefore, Philautus, if thy Violet seeue in the first moneth either to chide or chafe, thou must heare without reply, and endure with patience: for they that cannot suffer the wranglings of young married women, are not vnlike to those that tasting the grape to bee sowre before it be ripe, leaue to gather it when it is ripe, resembling them that being stung with the Bee, forsake the honey.

17021

Euphues and his England.

Thou must vse swete words, not bitter checks: and though happily thou wilt say that wands bee to bee wrought when they are greene, lest they rather bzeake then bend when they be dry, yet know also that he that bendeth a twig, because hee would see if it would bow by strength, may chance to haue a crooked tree, when he would haue a staight. It is prettily noted of a contention betwene the wind and the Sun, who should haue the victoꝝ. A gentleman walking abroad, the wind thought to blow off his cloake, which with great blasts and blusterings, striving to vnloose it, made it to sticke faster to his backe, for the more the wind increased the closer the cloake clapt to his bodie: then the sun shining with his hote beames, began to warme the Gentleman, who waring somewhat faint in this faire weather, did not onely put off his cloak but his coate, which the wind perceiuing, yelded the conquest to the Sun: In like manner fareth it with young wines, for if their husbands with great threatings, with iars, with bzauls seek to make them tractable, or bend their knees, the more stiffe they make them in the ioynts: the oftner they goe about by force to rule them, the more froward they finde them: but vsing milde words, gentle perswasions, familiar counsell, intreatie, submission, they shall not onely make them to bow their knees but to hold vp their hands, not only cause them to honoꝝ them, but to stand in awe of them: for their stomacks are all framed of Diamond, which is not to be bzaused with a hammer, but blood, not by force but flatterie; resembling the Cock, who is not to be feared by a Serpent, but a Glead. They that feare their Wines will make too sharpe wine, must not cut the arnies, but graft next to them Mendage, which causeth the grape to be more pleasant. They that feare to haue curst wines must not with rigour seeme to reclaime them, but saying gentle words in euery place by them, which maketh them more quiet.

Instruments sound sweetest when they be touched softest: women are wisest when they are vsed mildest. The horse striveth when he is hardly rained but hauing the bzidle, neuer stirreth: women are like mad if they be ruled by might, but with a gentle rain they will beare a white mouth. Call was cast out from the sacrifice of Iuno, which betokened that the marriage bed should be without bitterness.

Thou

Euphues and his England.

Thou must be a glasse to thy wife, for in thy face must she see her owne: for if when thou laughest, shee weeps, when thou mournest, shee giggle, the one is a manifest signe shee delighteth in others, the other is a token she despiseth thee. Be in thy behavioꝝ modest, temperate, sober: for as thou framest thy manners, so will thy wife fit hers. Kings that be wastlers, cause their subiectes to exercise that feat: Princes that are dissolutions, incite their people to vice Instruments: Husbands that are chaste and godly, cause also their wives to imitate their goodnesse.

For thy great dowrie, that ought to be in thine owne hands: for as wee call that wine wherein there is more then halfe water, so doe wee tearme that the goods of the husband, which his wife bringeth, though it be all.

Helen gaped for his goods, Paris for pleasure, Vlysses was content with chaste Penelope: so let it bee with thee, that whatsoeuer others marry for, be thou alwaies satisfied with vertue, otherwise may I vse that speech to thee, that Olimpias did to a yong Gentleman, who onely tooke a wife for beautie, saying: this Gentleman hath onely married his eyes, but by that time hee hath also wedded his eare, hee will confesse that a faire shooe wꝛings, though it bee smooth in the wearing.

Lycurgus made a Lawe that there should bee no dowry given with maidens, to the end that the vertuous might bee married, who commonly haue little, not the amorous, who oftentimes haue too much.

Behaue thy selfe modestlie with thy wife before company, remembering the severitie of Cato, who remooued Manlius from the Senate, for that hee was seene to kisse his wife in presence of his daughter: old men are seldome merry before children, lest their laughter might breed in them loosenes: husbands should scarce iest before their wives, lest want of modesty on their parts, bee cause of wantonnesse on their wives part. Imitate the Kings of Persia, who when they were given to ryot, kept no company with their wives, but when they vsed good order, had their Quenes euer at the Table. Giue no example of lightnesse, for looke what thou practisest most, that will thy wife follow most, though it become meth her least. And yet would I not haue thy wife so curious to please

Euphues and his England.

please thee, that fearing lest her husband should thinke thee pained her face, she should not therefore waſh it, onely let her reſtaine from ſuch things, as ſhee knoweth cannot well like thee: hee that commeth befoze an Elephant, will not weare bright colours, noꝝ he that commeth to a Bull, red, noꝝ hee that ſtandeth by a Tyger, play on a Taber: ſoꝝ that by the ſight oꝝ noiſe of theſe things, they are commonly much incenſed. In the like manner, there is no wiſe if ſhee bee honeſt, that will praſtiſe thoſe thinges, that to her mate ſhall ſeeme diſpleaſant, oꝝ moue him to choler. Be thriſtie, and wary in thy expences: ſoꝝ in old time they were as ſoone condemned by Lawe, that ſpent their wiues dowrie prodigally, as they that diuozed them wrongfully. Flie that vice that is peculiar to all thoſe of thy Country, Zealouſie: ſoꝝ if thou ſuſpect without cauſe, it is the next way to haue cauſe: women are to bee ruled by their owne wits, ſoꝝ be they chaſt, no golde can winne them, if inmodest, no grieſe can amend them, ſo that all miſtruſt is either needeleſſe oꝝ booteleſſe.

Be not too imperious ouer her, that will make her to hate thee, noꝝ too demilde, that will caſe her to diſdaine thee, let her neither be thy ſlaue noꝝ thy ſoueraigne, ſoꝝ if ſhee lie vnder thy foot ſhe will neuer loue thee, if clime aboue thy head, neuer care ſoꝝ thee: the one will breede thy ſhame to loue her ſo little, the other thy grieſe to ſuffer too much.

In gouerning thine houſhold, uſe thine owne eie, and her hand: ſoꝝ Huſwiferie conſiſteth as much in ſeeing things as ſetting things, and yet in that goe not about thy latchet, ſoꝝ Cooches are not to be taught in the kitchen, noꝝ Painters in their ſhoppes, noꝝ huſwines in their houſes. Let all the keyes hang at her girdle, but the purſe at thine: ſo ſhall thou know what thou doeſt ſpend, and how ſhe can ſpare.

Break nothing of thy ſtocke, ſoꝝ as the ſtone Thirreneus being whole ſwimmeth, but neuer ſo little diminished, ſtaketh to the botome: ſo a man hauing his ſtock full, is euer a a-floats, but waſting of his ſtoze becommeth bank-rupt.

Entertaine ſuch men as ſhall be truſtie: ſoꝝ if thou keepe a wolfe within thy doores to doe miſchiefe, oꝝ a fox to worke craft and ſubtiltie, thou ſhalt finde it as perillous, as if in thy Barne thou ſhouldeſt

Euphues and his England.

dest maintaine Dice, and in thy ground Hoales.

Let thy Maidens be such, as shall seeme redier to take paines, then follow pleasure, willinger to dresse vp their house then their heads, not so fine fingered to call for a Lute, when they should vse a distaffe; not so dainty mouthed, that their silken throats should swallow no packthreed. For thy diet, be not sumptuous, nor yet simple: for thy attire, not costlie, nor yet clownish, but cutting thy coate by thy cloath, goe no further then shall become thy estate, lest thou be thought proud, and so enuied: nor debase not thy birth, lest thou be deemed poore, and so pitied.

Now thou art come to that honourable estate, forget all thy former follies, and debate with thy selfe, that heretofore thou didst but goe about the world, and that now thou art come into it; that loue did once make thee to follow riot, that it must now enforce thee to pursue thrift, that then there was no pleasure to be compared to the courting of Ladies, that now there can bee no delight greater then to haue a wife. Commend me humbly to that noble man Surius, and to his good Lady Camilla.

Let my duty to the Lady Flauia bee remembred, and to thy Uncle: let nothing that may be added be forgotten. Thou wouldst haue me come againe into England, I would, but I cannot: but if thou desire to see Euphues, when thou art willing to visite thine Uncle, I will meete thee: in the meane season know that it is as farre from Athens to England, as from England vnto Athens. Thou saiest I am much wished for, that many faire promises are made to me: Truly, Philautus I know that a friend in the Court is better then a peny in the purse, but yet I haue heard, that such a friend cannot be gotten without pence. Faire words sat few, great promises, without performance, delight for the time, but yearke euer after. I cannot but thanke Surius, who wisheth me well, and all those that at my being in England liked mee well. And so with my hearty commendation vntill I heare from thee, I bid thee farewell.

Thine to vse, if mariage
change not manners,
Euphues.

This

17049

Euphues and his England.

This Letter dispatched, Euphues gaue himselfe to solitarines, determining to sojourne in some vncomforth place, vntilltime might turne whit salt into fine Sugar : soz surely he was both tormented in body and grieued in mind. And so I leaue him neither in Athens, noz else where that I know : but this order he left with his friends, that if any newes came, oz Letters, that they should direct them to the Mount of Silixedra, where I leaue him, either to his musing, oz Muses.

Gentlemen, Euphues is musing in the bottome of the mountaine Silixedra, Philautus is married in the Ile of England: two friends parted, the one liuing in the delights of his new wife, the other in contemplation of his old griefes.

What Philautus doth, they can imagine that are newly married: how Euphues liueth, they may ghesse that are cruelly martyred : I commit them both to stand to their owne bargaines, soz if I should meddle any further with the mariage of Philautus, it might happilie make him iealous, if with the melancholy of Euphues, it might cause him to be cholericke: so the one would take occasion to rub his head, sit his hat neuer so close, and the other offence to gall his heart, be his case neuer so quiet. I, Gentlewomen, am indifferent, soz it may bee that Philautus would not haue his life knowne which hee leadeth in mariage, noz Euphues his loue discried which hee beginneth in solitarines : lest either the one being too kind might bee thought to doat, oz the other too constant, might bee iudged to bee madde. But were the truth knowne, I am sure, Gentlewomen, it would be a hard question among Ladies, whether Philautus were a better wooer oz a husband: Whether Euphues were a better Louer oz a Scholler. But let the one marke the other, I leaue them both to conferre at their next meeting, and commit you to the Almighty.

FINIS.

ines,
time
y to
ither
with
ld di
er to

oun
land:
wife,

aried:
d: I
hould
ppilie
cause
head,
t, be
foz it
ch hee
egin
ht bee
to bee
nen, it
were
er Lo
them
the Al

17049

Lily (J) the Euphuist
E V P H V E S
AND HIS ENG-
LAND.

Containing his voiage and aduentures:
Mixed with sundry pretty discourses of
honest loue, the description of the Coun-
try, the Court, and the manners
of the Ile.

Delightfull to be read, and nothing hurt-
full to be regarded: wherein there is small
offence by lightnesse giuen to the wise, and lesse occasi-
on of loosenes proffered to the wanton.

¶ By *Iohn Lily*, Master of Art.

Commend it, or amend it.



AT LONDON.
Printed for *William Leake*, dwelling in Pauls church-
yard, at the signe of the Holy-ghost,
1609.

E. V. P. H. V. E. S.

AND
LONDON

General and
Mixed with many other
being long a description of the
of the Court and the

Delightful to be read, and nothing
will be found in it which is
not of the highest quality.



Printed in London
at the office of the
1800

To the right Honourable my very good
Lord and Master, Edward de Vere, Earle of Oxenford,
Vicount Bulbeck, Lord of Escales and Badlesmere, and
Lord great Chamberlaine of England, Iohn Lily wisheth long
life, with increase of Honour.

(. .)



THE first picture that *Phidias* the first Painter shadow-
ed, was the portrature of his owne person, saying
thus ; If it be well, I will paint many besides *Phidias*;
If ill, it shall offend none but *Phidias*. In the like ma-
ner fareth it with me (right Honourable) who neuer
before handling the pensill, did for my first counterfait color mine
own *Euphues*, being of this minde, that if it were likd, I would draw
more besids *Euphues*: if loathed, grieu none but *Euphues*. Since that,
some there haue been, that either dissembling the faults they saw,
for feare to discourage me, or not examining them for loue they
bare to me, that praised my old worke, & vrged me to make a new,
whose words I thus answered ; If I should coine a worse, it would be
thought that the former was framed by chaunce, as *Protogenes* did
the forme of his dogge ; if a better, for flattery, as *Narcissus* did,
who onely was in loue with his owne face ; if none at all, as froward
as the Musitions, who being intreated, will scarce sing Sol Fa, but
not desired, straine aboue Ela.

But their importunitie admitted no excuse, insomuch that I was
enforced to prefer their friendship before mine owne fame, being
more carefull to satisfie their requests, then fearefull of others re-
ports; so that at the last I was content to set another face to *Euphues*,
but yet iust behind the other, like the image of *Ianus*, not running
together like the Hopplitides of Parrhasius, lest they should seeme
so vnlike brothers, that they might be both thought bastards. The
picture wherof I yeeld as commo for al to view, but the patronage
only to your Lordship, as able to defend ; knowing that the face of
Alexander stamped in Copper, doth make it currant, that the name
of *Cesar* wrought in Canuas, is esteemed as Cambrick, that the ve-
ry feather of an Eagle is of force to consume the Beetle.

I haue brought into the world two children: of the first I was deli-
uered before my friends thought mee conceiued : of the second, I
went a whole yeere big, and yet when euery one thought me ready

The Epistle Dedicatory.

to lie downe, I did then quicken. But good huswiues shall make my excuse, who know that Hens do not lay Egges when they cluck, but when they cackle : nor men set forth bookes when they promise, but when they performe. And in this I resemble the Lapwing, who fearing her young ones to be destroyed by passengers, flieth with a false cry farre from the nests, making those that look for them, seeke where they are not. So I, suspecting that *Euphues* would bee carped of some curious Reader, thought by some false shew to bring them in hope of that which I then ment not, leading them with a longing of a second part, that they might speake well of the first, being neuer farther from my study, then when they thought me howering ouer it.

My first burden, comming before his time, must needs bee a blind whelp : the second brought forth after his time, must needs bee a monster. The one I sent to a noble man to nurse, who with great loue brought him vp for a yeare : so that whersoeuer he wander, he hath his nurses name in his fore-head, where sucking his first milke, he cannot forget his first Master.

The other (right Honorable) being yet in his swathe-clouts, I commit most humbly to your Lordships protection, that in his infancy he may bee kept by your good care from falles, and in his youth, by your great countenance shielded from blowes, and in his age, by your gracious countenance defended from contempt. He is my yongest and my last, and the paine that I sustained for him in trauell, hath made me past teeming, yet doe I thinke my selfe very fertill, in that I was not altogether barren. Glad I was to send them both abroad, lest making a wanton of my first, with a blinde conceit I should resemble the Ape, and kill it by culling it ; and not able to rule the second, I should with the Viper, lose my blood with mine owne broode. Twinnes they are not, but yet brothers, the one nothing resembling the other, and yet as all children are now a daies, both like the Father.

Wherin I am not vnlike vnto the vnskilful Painter, who hauing drawn the Twinnes of *Hippocrates* (who were as like as one pease is to another) and being told of his friends, that they were no more like then *Saturne* and *Apollo*, he had no other shift to manifest what his workewas, then ouer their heads to write, The Twinnes of *Hippocrates*. So may it be, that had I not named *Euphues*, few would haue

The Epistle Dedicatory.

hath thought it had bene *Euphues*, not that in goodnesse the one so farre excelleth the other, but that both being so bad, it is hard to iudge which is the worst. This vnskilfulnesse is no waies to be couered, but as *Accius* did his shortnes, who being a little Poet, framed for himselfe a great picture : so I being a naughty Painter, haue gotten a most noble Patron ; being of *Vlysses* minde, who thought himselfe safe vnder the shield of *Ajax*.

I haue now finished both my labours, the one being hatched in the hard Winter with the Alcion, the other not daring to bud till the cold were past: like the Mulbery. In either of the which, or in both, if I seeme to gleane after anothers cart for a few eares of corne, or of the tailors shreds to make me a liuery, I will not deny but that I am one of those Poets, which the Painters faine to come vnto *Homers* bason, there to lap vp that he doth cast vp.

In that I haue written, I desire no praise of others, but patience: altogether vnwilling, because euery way vnworthy to be accounted a worke-man. It sufficeth me to be a water-bough, no bud, so I may be of the same roote : to be the yron, no Steele, so I may bee in the same blade : to be vinegar, no wine, so it be in the same caske : to grinde colours for *Appelles*, though I cannot garnish, so I be of the same shop. What I haue done, was onely to keepe my selfe from sleepe, as the Crane doth the stone in her foote : and I would also with the same Crane I had been silēt holding a stone in my mouth. But it falleth out with me as with the yong wraстler that came to the games of Olimpus, who hauing taken a foile, thought scorne to leaue, till he had receiued a fall : or him that being pricked in the finger with a bramble, thrusteth his whole hand amongst the thornes for anger. For I, seeing my selfe not able to stand on the ice, did neuerthelesse aduenture to run, and being with my first Booke brought into disgrace, could not cease vntill I was brought into contempt by the second: wherein I resemble those that hauing once wet their feet, care not how deepe they wade.

In the which my wading (right honourable) if the enuious shall clap led to my heeles to make mee sinke, yet if your Lordship with your little finger do but hold me vp by the chinne, I shall swimme, and be so farre from being drowned, that I shall scarce be duckt.

When *Bucephalus* was painted, *Apelles* craued the iudgement of none but *Zenxes*: when *Iupiter* was carued, *Prisus* asked the censure

The Epistle Dedicatory.

of none but *Lisippus*: now *Euphues* is shadowed, onely I appeale to your Honor, not meaning thereby to be carelesse what others think but knowing that if your Lordship allow it, there is none but will like it: and if there be any so nice whom nothing can please, if he will not commend it, let him amend it.

And here (right Honorable) although the history seeme vnperfect, I hope your Lordship wil pardon it. *Apelles* died not before he could finish *Venus*, but before he durst. *Nichomachus* left *Tindarides* rawly, for feare of anger, not for want of Art. *Timomachus* brok off *Medea* scarce halfe colored, not that he was not willing to end it, but that he was threatned. I haue not made *Euphues* to stand without legs, for that I want matter to make them, but might to maintaine them; so that I am enforced with the old Painters, to colour my Picture but to the middle, as he that drew *Cyclops*, who in a little Table made him to lie behind an Oake, where one might perceiue but a peece, yet conceiue that all the rest lay behind the tree: or as hee that painted a horse in the Riuer with halfe legs, leauing the pasterns for the viewer to imagine, as in the water.

For he that vieweth *Euphues*, will say that he is drawn but to the waste: that he peepeth as it were from behind some Screen, that his feete are as it were in the water; which maketh mee present your Lordship with the wounded body of *Hector*, as it appeared to *Andromache*, and with halfe a face, as the Painter did him that had but one eie; for I am compelled to draw a hose on, before I can finish the legge, and in steed of a foot to set down a shooe. So that whereas I had thoght to shew the cunning of a Chyrurgion by mine Anatomie with a knife, I must play the Tailor on the shop-board with a paire of sheeres. But whether *Euphues* limp with *Vulcan*, as borne lame, or goe on stilts with *Amphionax*, for want of legges, I trust I may say, his feet should haue beene old *Helena*: for the poore Fisherman that was warned hee should not fish, did yet at his doore make Nets, and the olde Vintener of Venice, that was forbidden to sell wine, did notwithstanding hang out an Iuy-bush.

This Pamphlet (right Honorable) containing the estate of *England*, I know none more fit to defend it the one of the Nobility of *England*: nor any of the Nobility more ancient or more honorable, then your Lordship. Besides that, describing the condition of the *English* Court, and the Maiestie of our dread Soueraigne, I could not finde

The Epistle Dedicatory.

finde one more noble in the Court then your Honour, who is, or should be vnder her Maiestie in chiefeſt Court : by birth borne to the greateſt office, and therefore me thought by right to be placed in great authoritie. For who ſo compareth the honour of your Lordships noble houſe, and the fidelity of your Anceſtors, may well ſay, which no other can truly gain-ſay, *VERO NIHIL VERIVS*. So that I commit the end of all my paines vnto your moſt Honourable protection, aſſuring my ſelf that the little Cock-boat is ſafe when it is hoisted into a tall ſhip, that the Cat dare not fetch the Mouſe out of the Lions denne, that *Enphues* ſhall be without danger by your Lordships patronage : otherwiſe I cannot ſee, where I might find ſuccour in any noble perſonage. Thus praying continually for the increaſe of your Lordships honour, with all other things that you would wiſh, or God will grant, I end.

Your Lordships moſt dutifully
to command,

John Lyly.



To the Ladies and Gentle-women of Eng-
land, John Lily wisheth what they would.

ARachne hauing wouen in cloth of Arras a Raine-
bowe of sundry filkes, it was obiected vnto her by a Lady more
captious then cunning, that in her worke there wanted some
colours, for that in a Raine-bow there should be all. Vnto whom
she replied, if the colours lacke thou lookest for, thou must imagine that
they are on the other side of the cloth: for in the Skie we can discern but
one side of the Raine-bow, and what colours are in the other, see we cannot,
guesse we may.

In the like manner (Ladies and Gentlewomen) am I to shape an an-
swer in the behalfe of Euphues, who framing diuers questions and quirkes
of loue; if by some more curious then needeth, it shal be told him that some
sleights are wanting, I must say they are noted in the back-side of the book.
When Venus is painted, we cannot see her back but her face, so that all o-
ther things that are recounted in loue. Euphues thinketh them to
hang at Venus backe in a budget, which because he cannot see, hee will
not set downe. Those discourses, I haue not clapt in a cluster, thinking
with my selfe, that Ladies had rather be sprinkled with sweete water, then
washed: so that I haue sowed them here and there, as it were Strawberies,
not in heaps as Hops be: because I perceiue you haue more delight to ga-
ther flowres one by one in a Garden, then to snatch them by handfuls from
a garland.

It resteth, Ladies, that you vouchsafe the paines to read it; but at such
times as you spend in playing with your little dogs. And yet will I not
pinch you of that pastime, for I am content that your dogs lie in your laps,
so Euphues may be in your hands: that when you shall be wearie in reading
of the one, you may be readie to sport with the other: or handle him as you
doe your iunkets, that when you can eat no more, you tie some in your nap-
kin for your children; or if you be filled with the first part, put the second
in your pocket for your waiting maides. Euphues had rather be shut in a
Ladies coffer, then open in a Scholers study.

To the Ladies and Gentle-women.

Yet after dinner you may over-look him to keepe you from sleepe, or if you be heauie, to bring you asleepe: for to worke upon a full stomacke is against Physicke, and therefore better it were to hold Euphues in your hands, though you let him fall when you be willing to winke, then to sewe in a clout and pricke your fingers when you begin to nod.

Whatsoeuer he hath written, it is not to flatter, for he neuer reaped any reward by your sex, but repentance; neither can it be to mocke you, for he neuer knew any thing by your sex but righteousness. But I feare no anger for saying well, when there is none but thinketh she deserueth better. She that hath no glasse to dresse her head, will vse a bowle of water: shee that wanteth a sleeke-stone to smooth her linnen, will take a Pibble: the country dame girdeth herselfe as strait in the wast with a course caddis, as the Madam of the Court with a silke Riband. So that seeing euery one so willing to be pranked, I could not thinke any one unwilling to be praised. One hand washeth another, but they both wash the face: one foot goeth by another, but they both carry the bodie; Euphues and Philautus praise one another, but they both extoll women: Therefore in my minde, you are more beholding to Gentlemen that make the colours, then to the Painters, that draw your counterfait: for that Apelles cunning is nothing, if he paint with water; and the beautie of women not much, if they goe vnpraised.

If you thinke this loue dreamed, not done, yet mee thinketh you may as well like that loue which is penned and not practised, as that flower that is wrought with a needle, and groweth not by nature: the one you weare in your heads for the faire sight, though it haue no sauour, the other you may read for to passe the time, though it bring small pastime.

You choose cloth that will weare whitest, not that will last longest: colours that looke freshest, not that endure soundest: and I would you would read Bookes that haue more shew of pleasure, then ground of profit; then should Euphues be as often in your hands, being but a toy, as Lawne on your heads being but trash; the one will be scarce liked after once reading, and the other is worne out after the first washing.

There is nothing lighter then a feather, yet is it set a loft in a womans hat; nothing slighter then a haire, yet is it most frised in a Ladies head. so that I am in good hope, though there be nothing of lesse account then Euphues, yet he shall be marked with Ladies eies, and liked sometimes in their eares: for this I haue diligently obserued, that there shall bee nothing found, that may offend the chaste minde with vnseemely termes or vncleanlie talke.

To the Ladies and Gentle-women.

Then Ladies I commit my selfe to your courtesies, craning this only, that having read, you conceale your censure, writing your iudgements, as you do the Posies in your Rings, which are alwaies next to the finger, not to be seene of him that holdeth you by the hands, & yet knowne to you that weare them on your hands: if you be wrung (which cannot be done without wrong) it were better to cut the shooe then burne the last. If a Taylor make your Gowne too little, you cover his fault with a broad stomacher; if too great, with a number of pleights; if too short, with a faire guard; if too long, with a false gathering: my trust is you will deale in the like maner with Euph: that if we haue not fed your humour, yet you will excuse him more then the Taylor: for could Euphues take the measure of a womans minde, as the Taylor doth of her bodie, he would goe as neere to fit them for a fancie, as the other doth for a fashion.

He that weighs windes, must haue a steddie hand to hold the Ballance; and he that searcheth a womans thoughts, must haue his owne stayed. But lest I make my Epistle, as you doe new-found Bracelets, endlesse, I will frame it like a Bullet, which is no sooner in the mold but it is made. Committing your Ladships to the Almighty, who grant you all you would haue, and should haue: so your wishes stand with his will. And so I humbly bid you farewell.

Your Ladships to command

John Lily.



TO THE GENTLEMEN Readers.

Gentlemen, *Euphues* is come at the length, though too late: for whose absence, I hope three bad excuses shall stand in stead of one good reason. First, in his trauell you must thinke he loytered, tarrying many a moneth in *Italy*, viewing the Ladies in a Painters shop, when he should haue beene on the Seas in a Merchants shippe, not vnlike vnto an idle huswife, who is catching of flyes, when she should sweepe Copwebs.

Secondly, being a great start from *Athens* to *England*, he thought to stay for the aduantage of a Leape-yeare: and had not this yeere leapt with him, I thinke he had not yet leapt hither.

Thirdly, being arriued, he was as long in viewing of *London*, as hee was in comming to it, not far differing from Gentlewomen, who are longer a dressing their heads, then all their whole bodies. But now hee is come, Gentlemen, my request is onely to bid him welcome: for diuers there are, not that they dislike the matter, but that they hate the man, that will not sticke to reare *Euphues*, because they doe enuy *Lily*: wherein they resemble angry dogs, which bite the stone, not him that throweth it; or the cholericke Horse-rider, who being cast from a young Colt, and not daring to kill the horse, went into the Stable to cut the Saddle.

These be they that thought *Euphues* to be drowned, and yet were neuer troubled with drying of his clothes: but they ghesed as they wished, and I would it had happened as they desired. They that loath the Fountaines head, will neuer drinke of the little Brookes: they that seek to poyson the fish, will neuer eat the Spawne: they that like not me, will not allow any thing that is mine.

To the Gentlemen Readers.

But as the Serpent *Porphyrus*, though hee bee full of poyson, yet hauing no teeth, hurteth none but himselfe : so the enuious, though they swell with malice till they burst, yet hauing no teeth to bite, I haue no cause to feare. Onely my sute is to you, Gentlemen, that if any thing be amisse, you pardon it : if well, you defend it : and how-soeuer it be, you accept it.

Faults escaped in the printing, correct with your pennes; omitted by my negligence, ouerslip with patience, committed by ignorance, remit with fauour. If in euery part it seeme not alike, you know that it is not for him that fashioeth the shooe, to make the graine of the leather. The old Hermit will haue his talke fauor of the Cell, the old Courtier, his first loue taste of *Saturne*, yet the last Louer, may happily come somewhat neere *Jupiter*. Louers when they come in to a Garden, some gather Nettles, some Roses, one Tyme, another Sage, and euery one that for his Ladies fauor, that she fauoreth : in so much as there is no weede almost, but is worne.

If you, Gentlemen, doe the like in reading, I shall be sure all my discourses shall be regarded, some for the smell, some for the smart, all for a kinde of louing smacke : Let euery one follow his owne fancy, and say that is best, which he liketh best. And so I commit euery mans delight to his owne choice, and my selfe to all your courtesies.

Yours to vse,

John Lily.



EVPHVES AND HIS England.



Vphues hauing gotten all things necessaris for his voyage into England, accompanied onely with Philaurus, tooke shipping the first of December, 1579. by our English Computation: who as one resolved to see that with his eyes, which he had oftentimes heard with his eares, began to vse this perswasion with his friend Philaurus, aswell to counsell him how he should behaue himselfe in England, as to comfort him now being on the Seas. As I haue found thee willing to be a felloiw in my tra- uel, so would I haue thee ready to be a follower of my counsell: in the one thou shalt shew thy good will, in the other manifest thy wise- dome. We are now sailing into an Island of small compasse, as I ghesse by their Maps; but of great ciuility, as I heare by their ma- ners: which if it be so, it behoueth vs to be moze inquisitiue of their conditions, then of their Country, and moze carefull to marke the natures of their men, then curious to note the situation of the place. And surely me thinketh we cannot better bestow our time on the Sea, then in aduice how to behaue our selues when wee come to shoze: for greater danger is there to arriue in a strange Country where the inhabitants be politike, then to be tossed with the troublesome waues, where the Mariners be vnskilfull. For- tune guideth men in the rough Sea, but wisdom ruleth them in a strange Land.

If trauellers in this our age, were as wary of their conditions, as they be venturous of their bodies, or as willing to reape profit by their paines, as they are to endure perill for their pleasure, they would either prefer their owne soile befoze a strange land, or good

Euphues and his England.

counsell befoze their owne conceit. But as the young Scholler in Athens, went to heare Demosthenes eloquence at Corinth, and was intangled with Lais beauty: so most of our trauellers which pretend to get a smacke of strange language to sharpen their wits, are infected with vanity in following their wils. Danger and delight grow both vpon one skálke, the Rose and the Canker in one bud, white and blacke are commonly in one border. Seeing then my good Philautus, that we are not to conquer wild beasts by sight, but to confer with wise men by policy, we ought to take greater heed that we be not intrapped in folly, then feare to be subdued by force. And heere by the way it shall not be amisse, as well to driue away the tediousnes of time, as delight our selues with talke, to rehearse an old Treatise of an ancient Hermit, who meeting with a Pilgrime at his Cell, vttered a strange and delightfull Tale: which if thou Philautus art disposed to heare, and these present attentue to haue, I will spend some time about it, knowing it both fit for vs that be trauellers to learne wit, and not vnfit for those that be Merchants to get wealth.

Philautus, although the stumps of loue so sticked in his minde, that he rather wished to heare an Elegie in Ouid, then the tale of an Hermit: yet was he willing to lend his eare to his friend, who had left his heart with his Ladie. For you shall vnderstand, that Philautus hauing read the cooling card which Euphues sent him, sought rather to answer it, then allow it. And I doubt not but if Philautus fall into his old vaine in England, you shall heare of his new device in Italy. And although some shall thinke it impertinent to the Historie, they shall not finde it repugnant, no more then in one Possegay to set two flowers, or in one counterfeit two colours, which bringeth more delight then disliking. Philautus answered Euphues in this manner.

M^y good Euphues, I am as willing to heare thy tale, as I am to bee partaker of thy trauell: yet I know not how it cometh to passe, that my eies are either heauy against foule weather, or my head so drowsie against some ill newes, that this tale shall come in good time to bring me asleepe, and then shall I get no harme by the Hermite, though I get no good: the other that

Euphues and his England.

that were then in the Ship, flocked about Euphues, who began in this manner:

There dwelt sometimes in the Iland Scirum, an ancient Gentleman called Cassander, who aswell by his being a long gatherer, as his trade, being a leaud Usurer, wared so wealthy, that he was thought to haue almost all the money in that Country in his owne Coffers, being both aged and sickly, found such weaknesse in himselfe, that he thought Nature would yeeld to death, and Physicke to his diseases. This gentleman had one onely Son, who nothing resembled the Father either in fancy or fauour: which the old man perceiuing, dissembled with him both in nature and honesty, whom he caused to be called vnto his beddeside, and the Chamber being voided, he brake with him in these tearmes.

Callimachus, (so so was he called) thou art too young to die, and I too old to liue: yet as Nature must of necessitie pay her debt to Death, so must she also shew her deuotion to thee, whom I aliuie had to be the comfort of mine age, and whom alone I must leaue behinde me so to be the onely maintainer of all my honour. If thou couldest aswell conceiue the care of a Father, as I can leauell at the nature of a childe, or were I as able to vtter my affection towards a Sonne, as thou oughtest to shew thy duty to thy sire, then wouldest thou desire my life to enioy my counsell, and I should correct thy life to amend thy conditions: yet so tempered, as neither rigour might detract any thing from affection in mee, or feare any whit from thee in dutie. But seeing my selfe so feeble that I cannot liue to be thy guide, I am resolved to giue thee such counsell as may doe thee good: wherein I shall shew my care, and discharge my duty. My good Sonne, thou art to receiue by my death wealth, and by my counsell wisdom, and I would thou wert as willing to imprint the one in thy heart, as thou wilt be ready to beare the other in thy purse: to be rich is the gift of Fortune, to be wise, the grace of God. Haue more minde on thy Bookes, then on thy bags, more desire of godlinesse then gold, greater affection to die well, then to liue wantonly.

But as the Cipresse tree, the more it is watred, the more it withereth, and the oftner it is lopped, the sooner it dieth: so vnbridled youth, the more it is by graue aduice counselled, or due correction controlled,

Euphues and his England.

controlled, the sooner it falleth to confusion, hating all reasons that would bring it from folly, as that tree doth all remedies that should make it fertile.

Alas Callimachus, when wealth commeth into the hands of youth before they can use it, then fall they to all disorder that may be, teding that with a forke in one yeere, which was not gathered with a rake in twenty. But why discourse I with thee of worldly affaires, being my selfe going to heauen? Here, Callimachus, take the key of yonder great barred Chest, where thou shalt finde such store of wealth, that if thou use it with discretion, thou shalt become the onely rich man of the world. Thus turning him on the left side, with a deepe sigh and pitifull groane, gaue vp the ghost.

Callimachus, hauing more minde to looke to the locke, then for a shrouding sheet, the breath being scarce out of his Fathers mouth, and his body yet panting with heat, opened the Chest, where he found nothing but a Letter written very faire, and sealed vp with his signet at armes, with this superscription;

In finding nothing, thou shalt gaine all things.

Callimachus, although he were abashed at the sight of the emptie Chest, yet hoping this Letter would direct him to the golden Mine, he boldly opened it, the contents whereof followed in these termes.

Wisdomme is great wealth, sparing is good getting, thrift consisteth not in gold, but grace. It is better to die without money, then to liue without modestie. Put no more cloathes on thy backe, then will expell cold, neither any more meat in the bellie, then may quench hunger. Use not change in attire, nor varietie in thy diet, the one bringeth pride, the other surfets. Each vaine, void of pietie: both costly, wide of profit.

Goe to bedde with the Lambe, and rise with the Larke: Late watching in the night breedeth vnquiet: and long sleeping in the day, vngodlinesse: fly both, this as vnwholsome, that as vn honest. Enter not into bands, no not for thy best friends: hee that payeth another mans debts, seeketh his owne decay: it is as rare to see a rich surety, as a blacke Swan; and he that lendeth to all that will borrow,

Euphues and his England.

row, theweth great good will, but little wit. Lend not a pennie with out a pawne, for that will be a good gage to be row. Be not hasty to marry: it is better to haue one plough going, then two Cradles: and moze profit to haue a barne filled, then a bed. But if thou canst not liue chastly, choose such a one, as may bee moze commended for humility, then beauty. A good huswife is a great patrimony, and shee is most honourable that is most honest. If thou desire to be old, beware of too much wine. If to be wealthy, take heed of many women. If to be rich, shun playing at games. Long quaffing maketh a short life: fond lust causeth dry bones: and leaud pastimes naked purses. Let the Cooke be thy Physitian, and the shambles thy Apothecaries shop: Hee that for euery qualme will take a receipt, and cannot make two meales, vnlesse Galen bee his Gods good; shall bee sure to make the Physitian rich, and himselte a begger: his bodie will neuer bee without diseases, and his purse euer without money.

Be not too lauish in giuing almes: the charity of this country is, God help thee: and the courtesie, I haue the best wine in the towne for you.

Liue in the Countrey, not in the Court, where neither grasse will grow, nor mosse cleaue to thy heeles.

Thus hast thou, if thou canst vse it, the whole wealth of the world; and he that cannot follow good counsell, neuer can get commodity. I leaue thee moze then my father left me, for he dying, gaue mee great wealth, without care how I might keepe it: and I giue thee good counsell, with all meanes how to get riches. And no doubt, what so is gotten with wit, will be kept with warinesse, and increased with wisdome.

God blesse thee, and I blesse thee: and as I tender thy safety, so God deale with my soule.

Callimachus was stricken into such a maze at this his fathers last Will, that he had almost lost his former wit: and beeing in an extreame rage, renting his clothes and tearing his haire, he vttered these words:

Is this the nature of a Father, to deceiue his Sonne, or the part of crabbed age, to delude credulous youth? Is the death-bed, which ought to bee the end of deuotion, become the beginning of deceit?

C

Ah